











PHASES OF FAITH.

LONDON :  
GEORGE WOODFALL AND SON,  
ANGEL COURT, SKINNER STREET.

*Laurence Buchan*  
PHASES OF FAITH;

OR,

PASSAGES FROM  
THE HISTORY OF MY CREED.

BY  
FRANCIS WILLIAM NEWMAN,

FORMERLY FELLOW OF BALLIOL COLLEGE,  
OXFORD.

LONDON:  
JOHN CHAPMAN, 142, STRAND.

---

MDCCCL.

*J M Kennedy*

23507 - 500 5441-1

1015000

1015000 1015000 1015000

1015000 1015000 1015000

1015000 1015000 1015000

1015000 1015000 1015000

1015000 1015000 1015000

1015000 1015000 1015000

1015000 1015000 1015000

1015000 1015000 1015000

1015000 1015000 1015000

1015000 1015000 1015000

1015000 1015000 1015000

1015000 1015000 1015000

1015000 1015000 1015000

1015000 1015000 1015000

## PREFACE.

---

THIS is perhaps an egotistical book; egotistical certainly in its form, yet not in its purport and essence.

Personal reasons the writer cannot wholly disown, for desiring to explain himself to more than a few, who on religious grounds are unjustly alienated from him. If by any motive of curiosity or lingering remembrances they may be led to read his straightforward account, he trusts to be able to show them that he has had *no choice* but to adopt the intellectual conclusions which offend them;—that the difference between them and him turns on questions of Learning, History, Criticism and Abstract Thought;—and that to make *their* results (if indeed they have ever deeply and honestly investigated the matter) the tests of *his* spiritual state, is to employ unjust weights and a false balance, which are an abomination to the Lord. To defraud one's neighbour of any tithe of mint and cummin, would seem to them a sin: is it less to withhold affection, trust and free intercourse, and build up unpassable barriers of coldness and alarm, against one whose sole offence is to differ from them intellectually?

But the argument before the writer is something

immensely greater than a personal one. So it happens, that to vindicate himself is to establish a mighty truth; a truth which can in no other way so well enter the heart, as when it comes embodied in an individual case. If he can show, that to have shrunk from his successive convictions *would* have been “infidelity” to God and Truth and Righteousness; but that he has been “faithful” to the highest and most urgent duty;—it will be made clear that Belief is one thing and Faith another; that to believe is intellectual, nay possibly, “earthly, devilish;” and that to set up any fixed creed as a test of spiritual character is a most unjust, oppressive and mischievous superstition. The historical form has been deliberately selected, as easier and more interesting to the reader: but it must not be imagined that the author is giving his mental history in general, much less an autobiography. The progress of his *creed* is his sole subject; and other topics are introduced either to illustrate this, or as digressions suggested by it.

March 22nd, 1850.

# CONTENTS.

---

	PAGE
FIRST PERIOD.	
MY YOUTHFUL CREED . . . . .	1
SECOND PERIOD.	
STRIVINGS AFTER A MORE PRIMITIVE CHRISTIANITY .	26
THIRD PERIOD.	
CALVINISM ABANDONED, AS NEITHER EVANGELICAL NOR TRUE . . . . .	67
FOURTH PERIOD.	
THE RELIGION OF THE LETTER RENOUNCED . . . .	106
FIFTH PERIOD.	
FAITH AT SECOND HAND FOUND TO BE VAIN . . .	145
SIXTH PERIOD.	
HISTORY DISCOVERED TO BE NO PART OF RELIGION .	187
CONCLUSION.	
ON BIGOTRY AND PROGRESS . . . . .	215





# PHASES OF FAITH.

---

## FIRST PERIOD:

### MY YOUTHFUL CREED.

I FIRST began to read religious books at school, and especially the Bible, when I was eleven years old; and almost immediately commenced a habit of secret prayer. But it was not until I was fourteen that I gained any definite idea of a "scheme of doctrine," or could have been called a "converted person" by one of the Evangelical School. My religion then certainly exerted a great general influence over my conduct; for I soon underwent various persecution from my schoolfellows on account of it: the worst kind consisted in their deliberate attempts to corrupt me. An Evangelical clergyman at the school gained my affections, and from him I imbibed more and more distinctly the full creed which distinguishes that body of men; a body whose bright side I shall ever appreciate, in spite of my present perception that they have a dark side also. I well remember, that one day when I said to this friend of mine, that I could not understand how the doctrine of Election was reconcilable to God's Justice, but supposed that I should know this in due time, if I waited and believed His word;

—he replied with emphatic commendation, that this was the spirit which God always blessed. Such was the beginning and foundation of my faith,—an unhesitating unconditional acceptance of whatever was found in the Bible. While I am far from saying that my *whole* moral conduct was subjugated by my creed, I must insist that it was no mere fancy resting in my intellect: it was really operative on my temper, tastes, pursuits and conduct.

When I was sixteen, in 1821, I was “confirmed” by Dr. Howley, the Bishop of London, and endeavoured to take on myself with greater decision and more conscientious consistency the whole yoke of Christ. Every thing in the Service was solemn to me, except the bishop: he seemed to me a *made-up* man and a mere pageant. I also remember that when I was examined by the clergyman for confirmation, it troubled me much that he only put questions which tested my *memory* concerning the Catechism and other formulas, instead of trying to find out whether I had any actual faith in that about which I was to be called to profess faith: I was not then aware that his sole duty was to try my *knowledge*. But I already felt keenly the chasm that separated the High from the Low Church; and that it was impossible for me to sympathize with those who imagined that Forms could command the Spirit.

Yet so entirely was I enslaved to one Form,—that of observing the Sunday, or, as I had learned falsely to call it, the Sabbath,—that I fell into pain-

ful and injurious conflict with a superior kinsman, by refusing to obey his orders on the Sunday. He attempted to deal with me by mere authority, not by instruction; and to yield my conscience to authority would have been to yield up all spiritual life. I erred, but I was faithful to God.

When I was rather more than seventeen, I subscribed the 39 Articles at Oxford in order to be admitted to the University. Subscription was "no bondage," but pleasure; for I well knew and loved the Articles, and looked on them as a great bulwark of the truth; a bulwark however, not by being imposed, but by the spiritual and classical beauty which to me shone in them. But it was certain to me before I went to Oxford, and manifest in my first acquaintance with it, that very few academicians could be said to believe them. Of the young men not one in five seemed to have any religious convictions at all: the elder residents seldom or never showed sympathy with the doctrines that pervade that formula. I felt from my first day there, that the system of compulsory subscription was hollow, false and wholly evil.

Oxford is a pleasant place for making friends,—friends of all sorts that young men wish. One who is above envy and scorns servility,—who can praise and delight in all the good qualities of his equals in age, and does not desire to set himself above them or to vie with his superiors in rank,—may have more than enough of friends, for pleasure and for profit. So certainly had I; yet no one of my

equals gained any ascendancy over me, nor perhaps could I have looked up to any for advice. In some the intellect, in others the religious qualities, were as yet insufficiently developed: in part also I wanted discrimination, and did not well pick out the profounder minds of my acquaintance. However, on my very first residence in College, I received a useful lesson from another freshman,—a grave and thoughtful person, older (I imagine) than most youths in their first term. Some readers may be amused, as well as surprized, when I name the delicate question on which I got into discussion with my fellow freshman. I had learned from Evangelical books, that there is a *twofold* imputation to every saint,—not of the “sufferings” only, but also of the “righteousness” of Christ. They alledged, that, while the sufferings of Jesus are a compensation for the guilt of the believer and make him innocent, yet this suffices not to give him a title to heavenly glory; for which he must over and above be invested in active righteousness, by all Christ’s good works being made over to him. My new friend contested the latter part of the doctrine. Admitting fully that guilt is atoned for by the sufferings of the Saviour, he yet maintained, there was no farther imputation of Christ’s active service as if it had been our service. After a rather sharp controversy, I was sent back to study the matter for myself, especially in the third and fourth chapters of the Epistle to the Romans; and some weeks after, freely avowed to him that I was con-



vinced. Such was my first effort at independent thought against the teaching of my spiritual fathers, and I suppose it had much value for me. This friend might probably have been of service to me, though he was rather cold and lawyerlike; but he was abruptly withdrawn from Oxford to be employed in active life.

I first received a temporary discomfort about the 39 Articles from an irreligious young man, who had been my schoolfellow; who one day attacked the article which asserts that Christ carried "his flesh and bones" with him into heaven. I was not moved by the physical absurdity which this youth mercilessly derided; and I repelled his objections as an impiety. But I afterwards remembered the text, "*Flesh and blood* shall not inherit the kingdom of God;" and it seemed to me as if the compilers had really gone a little too far. If I had immediately then been called on to subscribe, I suppose it would have somewhat discomposed me; but as time went on, I forgot this small point, which was swallowed up by others more important. Yet I believe that henceforth a greater disposition to criticize the Articles grew upon me.

The first novel opinion of any great importance that I actually embraced, so as to give roughness to my course, was that which many then called the Oriel heresy about Sunday. Oriel College at this time contained many active and several original minds; and it was rumoured that one of the Fellows rejoiced in seeing his parishioners play at

cricket on Sunday: I do not know whether that was true, but so it was said. Another of them preached an excellent sermon before the University, clearly showing that Sunday had nothing to do with the Sabbath, nor the Sabbath with us, and inculcating on its own ground a wise and devout use of the Sunday hours. The evidently pious and sincere tone of this discourse impressed me, and I felt that I had no right to reject as profane and undeserving of examination the doctrine which it enforced. Accordingly I entered into a thorough searching of the Scripture without bias, and was amazed to find how baseless was the tenet for which in fact I had endured a sort of martyrdom. This, I believe, had a great effect in showing me how little right we have at any time to count on our opinions as final truth, however necessary they may just then be felt to our spiritual life. I was also scandalized to find how little candour or discernment some Evangelical friends, with whom I communicated, displayed in discussing the subject.

In fact, this opened to me a large sphere of new thought. In the investigation, I had learned, more distinctly than before, that the preceptive code of the Law was an essentially imperfect and temporary system, given "for the hardness of men's hearts." I was thus prepared to enter into the Lectures on Prophecy, by another Oriel Fellow,—Mr. Davison,—in which he traces the successive improvements and developments of religious doctrine, from the patriarchal system onward. I in consequence enjoyed

with new zest the epistles of St. Paul, which I read as with fresh eyes ; and now understood somewhat better his whole doctrine of "the Spirit," the coming of which had brought the church out of her childish into a mature condition, and by establishing a higher law had abolished that of the letter. Into this view I entered with so eager an interest, that I felt no bondage of the letter in Paul's own words : his wisdom was too much above me to allow free criticism of his weak points. At the same time, the systematic use of the Old Testament by the Puritans, as if it were "the rule of life" to Christians, I saw to be a glaring mistake, intensely opposed to the Pauline doctrine. This discovery, moreover, soon became important to me, as furnishing a ready evasion of objections against the meagre or puerile views of the Pentateuch ; for without very minute inquiry how far I must go to make the defence adequate, I gave a general reply, that the New Testament *confessed* the imperfections of the older dispensation. I still presumed the Old to have been perfect for its own objects and in its own place ; and had not defined to myself how far it was correct or absurd, to imagine morality to change with time and circumstances.

About this time also, ground was broken in my mind on a still more critical question, by another Fellow of a College ; who maintained that nothing but unbelief could arise out of the attempt to understand *in what way* and *by what moral right* the blood of Christ atoned for sins. He said, that

he bowed before the doctrine as one of "Revelation," and accepted it reverentially by an act of faith; but that he certainly felt unable to understand *why* the sacrifice of Christ, any more than the Mosaic sacrifices, should compensate for the punishment of our sins. Could carnal reason discern that human or divine blood, any more than that of beasts, had efficacy to make the sinner as it were sinless? It appeared to him a necessarily inscrutable mystery, into which we ought not to look.—The matter being thus forced on my attention, I certainly saw that to establish the abstract moral *right* and *justice* of vicarious punishment was not easy, and that to make out the fact of any "compensation"—(*i. e.* that Jesus really endured on the cross a true equivalent for the eternal sufferings due to the whole human race,)—was harder still. Nevertheless, I had difficulty in adopting the conclusions of this gentleman; FIRST, because, in a passage of the Epistle to the Hebrews, the sacred writer, in arguing—"For it is impossible that the blood of bulls and goats can take away sins," &c., &c. . . .—seems to expect his readers to see an inherent impropriety in the sacrifices of the Law, and an inherent moral fitness in the sacrifice of Christ. SECONDLY: I had always been accustomed to hear that it was by seeing the moral fitness of the doctrine of the Atonement, that converts to Christianity were chiefly made: so said the Moravians among the Greenlanders, so Brainerd among the North American Indians, so English missionaries among the



negroes at Sierra Leone:—and I could not at all renounce this idea. Indeed I seemed to myself to see this fitness most emphatically; and as for the *forensic* difficulties, I passed them over with a certain conscious reverence. I was not as yet ripe for deeper inquiry: yet I about this time decidedly modified my boyish creed on the subject, on which more will be said below.

Of more immediate practical importance to me was the controversy concerning Infant Baptism. For several years together I had been more or less conversant with the arguments adduced for the practice; and at this time I read Wall's defence of it, which was the book specially recommended at Oxford. The perusal brought to a head the doubts which had at an earlier period flitted over my mind. Wall's historical attempt to trace Infant Baptism up to the apostles seemed to me a clear failure: and if he failed, then who was likely to succeed? The arguments from Scripture had never recommended themselves to me. Even allowing that they might confirm, they certainly could not suggest and establish the practice. It now appeared that there was no basis at all; indeed, several of the arguments struck me as cutting the other way. "Suffer little children to come unto me," was urged as decisive: but it occurred to me that the disciples would not have scolded the little children away, if they had ever been accustomed to baptize them. Wall also, if I remember aright, declares that the children of proselytes were baptized by the Jews;

and deduces, that unless the contrary were stated, we must assume that also Christ's disciples baptized children: but I reflected that the baptism of *John* was one of "repentance," and therefore could not have been administered to infants; which (if precedent is to guide us) afforded the truer presumption concerning *Christian* baptism. Prepossessions being thus overthrown, when I read the apostolic epistles with a view to this special question, the proof so multiplied against the Church doctrine, that I did not see what was left to be said for it. I talked much and freely of this, as of most other topics, with equals in age, who took interest in religious questions; but the more the matters were discussed, the more decidedly impossible it seemed to maintain that the popular Church views were apostolic.

Here also, as before, the Evangelical clergy whom I consulted were found by me a broken reed. The clerical friend whom I had known at school wrote kindly to me, but quite declined attempting to solve my doubts; and in other quarters I soon saw that no fresh light was to be got. One person there was at Oxford, who might have seemed my natural adviser: his name, character and religious peculiarities have been so made public property, that I need not shrink to name him:—I mean my elder brother, the Rev. John Henry Newman. As a warm-hearted and generous brother, who exercised towards me paternal cares, I esteemed him and felt a deep gratitude; as a man of various culture and

peculiar genius, I admired and was proud of him ; but my doctrinal religion impeded my loving him as much as he deserved, and even justified my feeling some distrust of him. He never showed any strong attraction towards those whom I regarded as spiritual persons : on the contrary I thought him stiff and cold towards them. Moreover, soon after his ordination, he had startled and distressed me by adopting the doctrine of Baptismal Regeneration ; and in rapid succession worked out views which I regarded as full-blown "Popery." I speak of the years 1823-6 : it is strange to think that twenty years more had to pass before he learnt the place to which his doctrines belonged.

In the earliest period of my Oxford residence I fell into uneasy collision with him concerning Episcopal powers. I had on one occasion dropt something disrespectful against bishops or a bishop, —something which, if it had been said about a clergyman, would have passed unnoticed : but my brother checked and reproved me,—as I thought, very unconstructively,—for "wanting reverence towards Bishops." I knew not then, and I know not now, why Bishops, *as such*, should be more revered than common clergymen ; or Clergymen, *as such*, more than common men. In the World I expected pomp and vain show and formality and counterfeits : but of the Church, as Christ's own kingdom, I demanded reality and could not digest legal fictions. I saw round me what sort of young men were preparing to be clergymen : I knew the

attractions of family "livings" and fellowships, and of a respectable position and undefinable hopes of preferment. I farther knew, that when youths had become clergymen through a great variety of mixed motives, bishops were selected out of these clergy on avowedly political grounds; it therefore amazed me how a man of good sense should be able to set up a duty of religious veneration towards bishops. I was willing to honour a Lord Bishop as a peer of Parliament; but his office was to me no guarantee of spiritual eminence.—To find my brother thus stop my mouth, was a puzzle; and impeded all free speech towards him. In fact, I very soon left off the attempt at intimate religious intercourse with him, or asking counsel as of one who could sympathize. We talked indeed a great deal on the surface of religious matters; and on some questions I was overpowered and received a temporary bias from his superior knowledge; but as time went on, and my own intellect ripened, I distinctly felt that his arguments were too fine-drawn and subtle, often elaborately missing the moral points and the main points, to rest on some ecclesiastical fiction; and his conclusions were to me so marvellous and painful, that I constantly thought I had mistaken him. In short, he was my senior by a very few years: nor was there any elder resident at Oxford, accessible to me, who united all the qualities which I wanted in an adviser. Nothing was left for me but to cast myself on Him who is named the Father of Lights and resolve to follow the light which He



might give, however opposed to my own prejudices, and however I might be condemned by men. This solemn engagement I made in early youth, and neither the frowns nor the grief of my brethren can make me ashamed of it in my manhood.

Among the religious authors whom I read familiarly, was the Rev. T. Scott of Aston Sandford, a rather dull, very unoriginal, halfeducated, but honest, worthy, sensible, strongminded man, whose works were then much in vogue among the Evangelicals. One day my attention was arrested by a sentence in his defence of the doctrine of the Trinity. He complained that Anti-Trinitarians unjustly charged Trinitarians with self-contradiction. "If indeed we said" (argued he) "that God is three *in the same sense* as that in which He is one, that would be self-refuting; but we hold Him to be *three in one sense, and one in another.*" It crossed my mind very forcibly, that, if that was all, the Athanasian Creed had gratuitously invented an enigma. I exchanged thoughts on this with an undergraduate friend, and got no fresh light: in fact I feared to be profane, if I attempted to understand the subject. Yet it came distinctly home to me, that, whatever the depth of the mystery, if we lay down any thing about it *at all*, we ought to understand our own words; and I presently augured that Tillotson had been right in "wishing our Church well rid" of the Athanasian Creed; which seemed a mere offensive blurting out of intellectual difficulties. I had however no doubts, even of a passing kind, for years to come, concern-

ing the substantial truth and certainty of the ecclesiastical Trinity.

When the period arrived for taking my Bachelor's degree, it was requisite again to sign the 39 Articles, and I now found myself embarrassed by the question of Infant Baptism. One of the articles contains the following words, "The baptism of young children is in any wise to be retained, as most agreeable to the institution of Christ." I was unable to conceal from myself, that I did not believe this sentence; and I was on the point of refusing to take my degree. I overcame my scruples by considering, 1. That concerning this doctrine I had no active *dis*-belief, on which I would take any practical step; as I felt myself too young to make any counterdeclaration: 2. That it had no possible practical meaning to me, since I could not be called on to baptize, nor to give a child for baptism. Thus I persuaded myself. Yet I had not an easy conscience; nor can I now defend my compromise: for I believe that my repugnance to Infant Baptism was really intense, and my conviction that it is unapostolic as strong then as now. The topic of my "youth" was irrelevant; for if I was not too young to subscribe, I was not too young to refuse subscription. The argument that the article was "unpractical" to me, goes to prove, that if I were ordered by a despot to qualify myself for a place in the Church by solemnly renouncing the first book of Euclid as false, I might do so without any loss of moral dignity. Altogether, this humiliating

affair showed me what a trap for the conscience these subscriptions are: how comfortably they are passed while the intellect is torpid or immature or where the conscience is callous, but how they undermine truthfulness in the active thinker, and torture the sensitiveness of the tenderminded. As long as they are maintained, in Church or University, these institutions exert a positive influence to deprave or eject those who ought to be their most useful and honoured members.

It was already breaking upon me, that I could not fulfil the dreams of my boyhood as a minister in the Church of England. For, supposing that with increased knowledge I might arrive at the conclusion that Infant Baptism was a fore-arranged "development,"—not indeed practised in the *first* generation, but expedient, justifiable, and intended for the *second*, and probably then sanctioned by one still living apostle,—even so, I foresaw the still greater difficulty of Baptismal Regeneration behind. For any one to avow that Regeneration took place in Baptism, seemed to me little short of a confession that he had never himself experienced what Regeneration is. If I *could* then have been convinced that the apostles taught no other regeneration, I almost think that even their authority would have snapped under the strain: but this is idle theory; for it was as clear as daylight to me that they held a totally different doctrine, and that the High Church and Popish fancy is a superstitious perversion, based upon carnal inability to understand a strong

spiritual metaphor. On the other hand, my brother's arguments that the Baptismal Service of the Church taught "spiritual regeneration" during the ordinance, were short, simple and overwhelming. To imagine a *twofold* "spiritual regeneration" was evidently a hypothesis to serve a turn, nor in any of the Church formulas was such an idea broached. Nor could I hope for relief by searching through the Homilies or by drawing deductions from the Articles: for if I there elicited a truer doctrine, it would never show the Baptismal Service not to teach the Popish tenet; it would merely prove the Church-system to contain contradictions, and not to deserve that absolute declaration of its truth, which is demanded of Church ministers. With little hope of advantage, I yet felt it a duty to consult many of the Evangelical clergymen whom I knew, and to ask how *they* reconciled the Baptismal Service to their consciences. I found (if I remember) three separate theories among them,—all evidently mere shifts invented to avoid the disagreeable necessity of resigning their functions. Not one of these good people seemed to have the most remote idea, that it was their duty to investigate the meaning of the formulary with the same unbiassed simplicity as if it belonged to the Gallican Church. They did not seek to know what it was written to mean, nor what sense it must carry to every simpleminded hearer; but they solely asked, how they could manage to assign to it a sense not wholly irreconcilable with their own doctrines and preaching. This was too



obviously hollow. The last gentleman whom I consulted, was the rector of a parish, who from week to week baptized children with the prescribed formula: but to my amazement, he told me that *he* did not like the Service, and did not approve of Infant Baptism; to both of which things he submitted, solely because, as an inferior minister of the Church, it was his duty to obey established authority! The case was desperate. But I may here add, that this clergyman, within a few years from that time, redeemed his freedom and his conscience by the painful ordeal of abandoning his position and his flock, against the remonstrances of his wife, to the annoyance of his friends, and with a young family about him.

Let no reader accept the preceding paragraph as my testimony that the Evangelical clergy are less simpleminded and less honourable in their subscriptions than the High Church. I do not say, and I do not believe this. *All* who subscribe, labour under a common difficulty, in having to give an absolute assent to formulas that were made by a compromise and are not homogeneous in character. To the High Churchman the *Articles* are a difficulty, to the Low Churchman various parts of the *Liturgy*. All have to do violence to some portion of the system; and considering at how early an age they are entrapped into subscription, they all deserve our sincere sympathy and very ample allowance, as long as they are pleading for the rights of conscience: only when they become overbearing, dic-

tatorial, proud of their chains, and desirous of ejecting others, does it seem right to press them with the topic of inconsistency. There is, besides, in the ministry of the Established Church a sprinkling of original minds, who cannot be included in either of the two great divisions; and from these *à priori* one might have hoped much good to the Church. But such persons no sooner speak out, than the two hostile parties hush their strife, in order the more effectually to overwhelm with just and unjust imputations those who dare to utter truth that has not yet been consecrated by Act of Parliament or by Church Councils. Among those who have subscribed, to attack others is easy, to defend oneself most arduous. Recrimination is the only powerful weapon, and noble minds are ashamed to use this. No hope therefore shows itself of Reform from within.—For myself, I feel that nothing saved me from the infinite distresses which I should have encountered, had I become a minister of the Episcopal Church, but the very unusual prematurity of my religious development.

Besides the great subject of Baptismal Regeneration, the entire Episcopal theory and practice offended me. How little favourably I was impressed, when a boy, by the lawn sleeves, wig, artificial voice and manner of the Bishop of London, I have already said: but in six years more, reading and observation had intensely confirmed my first auguries. It was clear beyond denial, that for a century after the

death of Edward VI. the bishops were the tools of court-bigotry, and often owed their highest promotions to base subservience. After the Revolution, the Episcopal order (on a rough and general view) might be described as a body of supine persons, known to the public only as a dead weight against all change that was distasteful to the civil power. In the last century and a half, the nation was often afflicted with sensual royalty, bloody wars, venal statesmen, corrupt constituencies, bribery and violence at elections, flagitious drunkenness pervading all ranks and insinuating itself into Colleges and Rectories. The prisons of the country had been in a most disgraceful state ; the fairs and wakes were scenes of rude debauchery, and the theatres were—still, in this nineteenth century—whispered to be haunts of the most debasing immorality. I could not learn that any bishop had ever taken the lead in denouncing these iniquities : nor that when any man or class of men rose to denounce them, the Episcopal Order failed to throw itself into the breach to defend corruption by at least passive resistance. Neither Howard, Wesley and Whitfield, nor yet Clarkson, Wilberforce, or Romilly, could boast of the episcopal bench as an ally against inhuman or immoral practices. Our oppressions in India, and our sanction to the most cruel superstitions of the natives, led to no outcry from the Bishops. Under their patronage the two old Societies of the Church had gone to sleep until aroused by the Church Missionary and Bible

Societies, which were opposed by the Bishops. Their policy seemed to be, to do nothing, until somebody else was likely to do it; upon which they at last joined the movement in order to damp its energy, and get some credit from it. Now what were Bishops for, but to be the originators and energetic organs of all pious and good works? and what were they in the House of Lords for, if not to set a higher tone of purity, justice, and truth? and if they never did this, but weighed down those who attempted it, was not that a condemnation (not perhaps of all possible Episcopacy, but) of Episcopacy as it exists in England? If such a thing as a moral argument *for* Christianity was admitted as valid, surely the above was a moral argument *against* English Prelacy. It was moreover evident at a glance, that this system of ours neither was, nor could have been, apostolic: for as long as the civil power was hostile to the Church, *a Lord bishop nominated by the civil ruler* was an impossibility: and this it is, which determines the moral and spiritual character of the English institution, not indeed exclusively but preëminently.

I still feel amazement at the only defence which (as far as I know) the pretended followers of Antiquity make for the nomination of bishops by the Crown. In the third and fourth centuries, it is well known that every new bishop was elected by the universal suffrage of the laity of the church; and it is to these centuries that the High Episcopalians love to appeal, because they can quote thence out of



Cyprian\* and others in favour of Episcopal authority. When I alledged the dissimilarity in the mode of election, as fatal to this argument in the mouth of an English High Churchman, I was told that "the Crown now *represents* the Laity!" Such a fiction may be satisfactory to a pettifogging lawyer, but as the basis of a spiritual system is indeed supremely contemptible.

With these considerations on my mind,—while quite aware that some of the bishops were good and valuable men,—I could not help feeling that it would be a perfect misery to me to have to address one of them taken at random as my "Right Reverend Father in God," which seemed like a foul hypocrisy; and when I remembered who had said, "Call no man Father on earth; for one is your Father, who is in heaven:"—words, which not merely in the letter, but still more distinctly in the spirit, forbid the state of feeling which suggested this episcopal appellation,—it did appear to me, as if "Prelacy" had been rightly coupled by the Scotch Puritans with "Popery" as antichristian.

Connected inseparably with this, was the form of Ordination, which, the more I thought of it, seemed the more offensively and outrageously Popish, and

\* I remember reading about that time a sentence in one of his Epistles, in which this same Cyprian, the earliest mouthpiece of "proud prelacy," claims for the *populace* supreme right of deposing an unworthy bishop. I quote the words from memory, and do not know the reference. "Plebs summam habet potestatem episcopos seu dignos eligendi seu indignos detrudendi."

quite opposed to the Article on the same subject. In the Article I read, that we were to regard such to be legitimate ministers of the word, as had been duly appointed to this work *by those who have public authority for the same*. It was evident to me that this very wide phrase was adapted and intended to comprehend the “public authorities” of all the Reformed Churches, and could never have been selected by one who wished to narrow the idea of a legitimate minister to Episcopalian Orders; besides that we know Lutheran and Calvinistic ministers to have been actually admitted in the early times of the Reformed English Church, by the force of that very Article. To this, the only genuine Protestant view of a Church, I gave my most cordial adherence: but when I turned to the Ordination Service, I found the Bishop there, by his authoritative voice, absolutely to bestow on the candidate for Priesthood the power to forgive or retain sins!—“Receive ye the Holy Ghost! Whose sins ye forgive, they are forgiven: whose sins ye retain, they are retained.” If the Bishop really had this power, he of course had it only *as* Bishop, that is, by his consecration; thus it was formally transmitted. To allow this, vested in all the Romish bishops a spiritual power of the highest order, and denied the legitimate priesthood in nearly all the Continental Protestant Churches;—a doctrine irreconcilable with the article just referred to and intrinsically to me incredible. That an unspiritual—and it may be, a wicked—man, who can have no pure insight into devout and

penitent hearts, and no communion with the Source of holy discernment, could never receive by an outward form the divine power to forgive or retain sins, or the power of bestowing this power, was to me then, as now, as clear and certain as any possible first axiom. Yet if the Bishop had not this power, how profane was the pretension! Thus again I came into rude collision with English Prelacy.

The year after taking my degree, I made myself fully master of Paley's acute and original treatise, the "*Horæ Paulinæ*," and realized the whole life of Paul as never before. This book greatly enlarged my mind as to the resources of historical criticism. Previously, my sole idea of criticism was that of the direct discernment of style; but I now began to understand what powerful argument rose out of combinations: and the very complete establishment which this work gives to the narrative concerning Paul in the latter half of the "*Acts*," appeared to me to reflect critical honour on the whole New Testament.—In the epistles of this great apostle, notwithstanding their argumentative difficulties, I found a moral reality and a depth of wisdom perpetually growing upon me with acquaintance: in contrast to which I was conscious that I made no progress in understanding the four gospels. Their first impression had been their strongest: and their difficulties remained as fixed blocks in my way. Was this possibly because Paul is a reasoner, (I asked)? hence, with the cultivation of my understanding, I have entered more easily into the heart

of his views :—while Christ enunciates divine truth dogmatically ; consequently insight is needed to understand him ? On the contrary however, it seemed to me, that the doctrinal difficulties of the gospels depend chiefly either on obscure metaphor or on apparent incoherence : and I timidly asked a friend, whether the *dislocation* of the discourses of Christ by the narrators may not be one reason why they are often obscure : for on comparing Luke with Matthew, it appears that we cannot deny occasional dislocation. If at this period a German divinity professor had been lecturing at Oxford, or German books had been accessible to me, it might have saved me long peregrinations of body and mind.

About this time I had also begun to think that the old writers called *Fathers* deserved but a small fraction of the reverence which is awarded to them. I had been strongly urged to read Chrysostom's work on the Priesthood, by one who regarded it as a suitable preparation for Holy Orders ; and I did read it. But I not only thought it inflated, and without moral depth, but what was far worse, I encountered in it a deliberate defence of falsehood in the cause of the Church. A vague memory remains on my mind, that he has a sentence which sums up his doctrine as *καλὸν ψεῦδος καλὸν χρῆμα*, “a fine lie is a fine thing.” It is certainly to this effect. I rose from the treatise in disgust, and for the first time sympathized with Gibbon ; and augured that if he had spoken with moral indignation, instead of pompous sarcasm, against the frauds



of the ancient "Fathers," his blows would have fallen far more heavily on Christianity itself.

I also, with much effort and no profit, read the Apostolic Fathers. Of these, Clement alone seemed to me respectable, and even he to write only what I could myself have written, with Paul and Peter to serve as a model. But for Barnabas and Hermas I felt a contempt so profound, that I could hardly believe them genuine. On the whole, this reading greatly exalted my sense of the unapproachable greatness of the New Testament. The moral chasm between it and the very earliest Christian writers seemed to me so vast, as only to be accounted for by the doctrine in which all spiritual men (as I thought) unhesitatingly agreed, — that the New Testament was dictated by the immediate action of the Holy Spirit. The infatuation of those, who, after this, rested on *the Councils*, was to me unintelligible. Thus the Bible in its simplicity became only the more all-ruling to my judgment, because I could find no Articles, no Church Decrees, and no apostolic individual, whose rule over my understanding or conscience I could bear. Such may be conveniently regarded as the first period of my Creed.

## SECOND PERIOD :

## STRIVINGS AFTER A MORE PRIMITIVE CHRISTIANITY.

My second period is characterized, partly by the great ascendancy exercised over me by one powerful mind and still more powerful will, partly by the vehement effort which throughout its duration urged me to long after the establishment of Christian Fellowship in a purely Biblical Church as the first great want of Christendom and of the world.

I was already uneasy in the sense that I could not enter the ministry of the Church of England, and knew not what course of life to choose. I longed to become a missionary for Christ among the heathen,—a notion I had often fostered while reading the lives of missionaries : but again, I saw not how that was to be effected. After taking my degree, I became Fellow of Balliol College ; and the next year I accepted an invitation to Ireland, and there became private tutor for fifteen months in the house of one now deceased, whose name I would gladly mention for honour and affection ;—but I withhold my pen. While he repaid me munificently for my services, he behaved towards me as a father, or indeed as an elder brother, and instantly made me feel as a member of his family.

His great talents, high professional standing, nobleness of heart and unfeigned piety, would have made him a most valuable counsellor to me ; but he was too gentle, too unassuming, too modest ; he looked to be taught by his juniors, and sat at the feet of one whom I proceed to describe.

This was a young relative of his,—a most remarkable man,—who rapidly gained an immense sway over me. I shall henceforth call him “the Irish clergyman.” His “bodily presence” was indeed “weak!” A fallen cheek, a bloodshot eye, crippled limbs resting on crutches, a seldom shaven beard, a shabby suit of clothes and a generally neglected person, drew at first pity, with wonder to see such a figure in a drawing room. It was currently reported that a person in Limerick offered him a halfpenny, mistaking him for a beggar ; and if not true, the story was yet well invented. This young man had taken high honours in Dublin University and had studied for the bar, where under the auspices of his eminent kinsman he had excellent prospects ; but his conscience would not allow him to take a brief, lest he should be selling his talents to defeat justice. With keen logical powers, he had warm sympathies, solid judgment of character, thoughtful tenderness and total self-abandonment. He before long took Holy Orders, and became an indefatigable curate in the mountains of Wicklow. Every evening he sallied forth to teach in the cabins, and roving far and wide over mountain and amid bogs, was seldom home before mid-

night. By such exertions his strength was undermined, and he so suffered in his limbs that not lameness only, but yet more serious results were feared. He did not fast on purpose, but his long walks through wild country and indigent people inflicted on him much severe deprivation: moreover, as he ate whatever food offered itself,—food unpalatable and often indigestible to him, his whole frame might have vied in emaciation with a monk of La Trappe.

Such a phenomenon intensely excited the poor Romanists, who looked on him as a genuine “saint” of the ancient breed. The stamp of heaven seemed to them clear in a frame so wasted by austerity, so superior to worldly pomp, and so partaking in all their indigence. That a dozen such men would have done more to convert all Ireland to Protestantism, than the whole apparatus of the Church Establishment, was ere long my conviction; though I was at first offended by his apparent affectation of a careless exterior. But I soon understood, that in no other way could he gain equal access to the lower and lowest orders, and that he was moved not by asceticism, nor by ostentation, but by a self-abandonment fruitful of consequences. He had practically given up all reading except that of the Bible; and no small part of his movement towards me soon took the form of dissuasion from all other voluntary study.

In fact, I had myself more and more concentrated my religious reading on this one book: still, I could



not help feeling the value of a cultivated mind. Against this, my new eccentric friend, (himself having enjoyed no mean advantages of cultivation,) directed his keenest attacks. I remember once saying to him, in defence of worldly station,—“To desire to be rich is unchristian and absurd; but if I were the father of children, I should wish to be rich enough to secure them a good education.” He replied: “If I had children, I would as soon see them break stones on the road, as do any thing else, if only I could secure to them the Gospel and the grace of God.” I was unable to say Amen, but I admired his unflinching consistency;—for now, as always, all he said was based on texts aptly quoted and logically enforced. He more and more made me ashamed of Political Economy and Moral Philosophy, and all Science; all of which ought to be “counted dross for the excellency of the knowledge of Christ Jesus our Lord.” For the first time in my life I saw a man earnestly turning into reality the principles which others confessed with their lips only. That the words of the New Testament contained the highest truth accessible to man,—truth not to be taken from nor added to,—all (as I thought) confessed: never before had I seen a man so resolved that no word of it should be a dead letter to him. I once said: “But do you really think that *no* part of the New Testament may have been temporary in its object? for instance, what should we have lost, if St. Paul had never written the verse, ‘The cloak which I have left at Troas,

bring with thee, and the books, but especially the parchments.'” He answered with the greatest promptitude: “*I* should certainly have lost something; for that is exactly the verse which alone saved me from selling my little library. No! every word, depend upon it, is from the Spirit, and is for eternal service.”

A political question was just then exceedingly agitating Ireland, in which nearly every body took a great interest;—it was, the propriety of admitting Romanist members of Parliament. Those who were favourable to the measure, generally advocated it by trying to undervalue the chasm that separates Romish from Protestant doctrine. By such arguments they exceedingly exasperated the real Protestants, and, in common with all around me, I totally repudiated that ground of comprehension. But I could not understand why a broader, more generous and every way safer argument was not dwelt on; viz. the unearthliness of the claims of Christianity. When Paul was preaching the kingdom of God in the Roman empire, if a malicious enemy had declared to a Roman proconsul that the Christians were conspiring to eject all Pagans out of the senate and out of the public administration; who can doubt what Paul would have replied?—The kingdom of God is not of this world: it is within the heart, and consists in righteousness, peace and joy in the Holy Ghost. These are our “honours” from God; we ask not the honours of empire and title. Our King is in heaven; and



will in time return to bring to an end these earthly kingdoms: but until then, we claim no superiority over you on earth. As the riches of this world, so the powers of this world, belong to another king: we dare not try to appropriate them in the name of our heavenly King; nay, we should hold it as great a sin to clutch empire for our churches, as to clutch wealth: God forbid that we covet either!—But what then if the enemy had had foresight to reply, O proconsul, this Paul talks finely, and perhaps sincerely: but if so, yet cheat not yourself to think that his followers will tie themselves to his mild equity and disinterestedness. Now indeed they are weak: now they profess unworldliness and unambition: they wish only to be recognized as peaceable subjects, as citizens and as equals: but if once they grow strong enough, they will discover that their spears and swords are the symbol of their Lord's return from heaven; that he now at length commissions them to eject you, as vile infidels, from all seats of power,—to slay you with the sword, if you dare to offer sacrifice to the immortal gods,—to degrade you so, that you shall not only not enter the senate, or the privy council of the prince, or the judgment-seat, but not even the jury-box, or a municipal corporation, or the pettiest edileship of Italy; nay, you shall not be lieutenants of armies, or tribunes, or any thing above the lowest centurion. You shall become a plebeian class,—cheap bodies to be exposed in battle or to toil in the field,

and pay rent to the lordly Christian. Such shall be the fate of *you*, the worshippers of Quirinus and of Jupiter Best and Greatest, if you neglect to crush and extirpate, during the weakness of its infancy, this ambitious and unscrupulous portent of a religion.—Oh, how would Paul have groaned in spirit, at accusations such as these, hateful to his soul, aspersing to his churches, but impossible to refute! Either Paul's doctrine was a fond dream, (felt I,) or it is certain, that he would have protested with all the force of his heart against the principle that Christians *as such* have any claim to earthly power and place; or that they could, when they gained a numerical majority, without sin enact laws to punish, stigmatize, exclude, or otherwise treat with political inferiority the Pagan remnant. To uphold such exclusion, is to lay the axe to the root of the spiritual Church, to stultify the apostolic preaching, and at this moment justify Moham-medans in persecuting Christians. For the Sultan might fairly say,—“I give Christians the choice of exile or death: I will not allow that sect to grow up here; for it has fully warned me, that it will proscribe my religion in my own land, as soon as it has power.”

On such grounds I looked with amazement and sorrow at spiritual Christians who desired to exclude the Romanists from full equality; and I was happy to enjoy as to this the passive assent of the Irish clergyman; who, though “Orange” in his con-

nexions, and opposed to *all* political action, yet only so much the more deprecated what he called “political Protestantism.”

In spite of the strong revulsion which I felt against some of the peculiarities of this remarkable man, I for the first time in my life found myself under the dominion of a superior. When I remember, how even those bowed down before him, who had been to him in the place of parents,—accomplished and experienced minds,—I cease to wonder in the retrospect, that he riveted me in such a bondage. Henceforth I began to ask: what will *he* say to this and that? In *his* reply I always expected to find a higher portion of God’s Spirit, than in any I could frame for myself. In order to learn divine truth, it became to me a surer process to consult him, than to search for myself and wait upon God: and gradually, (as I afterwards discerned,) my religious thought had merged in the mere process of developing fearlessly into results all his principles, without any deeper examining of my foundations. Indeed, but for a few weaknesses which warned me that he might err, I could have accepted him as an apostle commissioned to reveal the mind of God.

In his after-course (which I may not indicate) this gentleman has every where displayed a wonderful power of bending other minds to his own, and even stamping upon them the tones of his voice and all sorts of slavish imitation. Over the general results of his action I have long deeply mourned, as blunting his natural tenderness and sacrificing his wisdom

to the Letter, dwarfing men's understandings, contracting their hearts, crushing their moral sensibilities, and setting those at variance who ought to love: yet oh! how specious was it in the beginning! he *only* wanted men "to submit their understandings *to God*," that is, to the Bible, that is, to his interpretation! From seeing his action and influence I have learnt, that if it be dangerous to a young man (as it assuredly is) to have *no* superior mind to which he may look up with confiding reverence, it may be even more dangerous to think that he has found such a mind: for he who is most logically consistent, though to a one-sided theory, and most ready to sacrifice self to that theory, seems to ardent youth the most assuredly trustworthy guide. Such was Ignatius Loyola in his day.

My study of the New Testament at this time had made it impossible for me to overlook that the apostles held it to be a duty of all disciples to expect a near and sudden destruction of the earth by fire, and constantly to be expecting *the return of the Lord from heaven*. It was easy to reply, that "experience disproved" this expectation; but to this an answer was ready provided in Peter's 2nd Epistle, which forewarns us that we shall be taunted by the unbelieving with this objection, but bids us, *nevertheless*, continue to look out for the speedy fulfilment of this great event. In short, the case stood thus:—If it was not *too soon* 1800 years ago to stand in daily expectation of it, it is not too soon now: to say that it is *too late*, is not merely to im-



pute error to the apostles, on a matter which they made of first-rate moral importance, but is to say, that those whom Peter calls “ungodly scoffers, walking after their own lusts”—were right, and he was wrong, on the very point for which he thus vituperated them.

The importance of this doctrine is, that *it totally forbids all working for earthly objects distant in time*: and here the Irish clergyman threw into the same scale the entire weight of his character. For instance; if a youth had a natural aptitude for mathematics, and he asked, ought he to give himself to the study, in hope that he might diffuse a serviceable knowledge of it, or possibly even enlarge the boundaries of the science? my friend would have replied, that such a purpose was very proper, if entertained by a worldly man. Let the dead bury their dead; and let the world study the things of the world; they know no better, and they are of use to the Church, who may borrow and use the jewels of the Egyptians. But such studies cannot be eagerly followed by the Christian, except when he yields to unbelief. In fact, what would it avail even to become a second La Place after thirty years' study, if in five and thirty years the Lord descended from heaven, snatched up all his saints to meet him, and burned to ashes all the works of the earth? Then all the mathematician's work would have perished, and he would grieve over his un wisdom, in laying up store which could not stand the fire of the Lord. Clearly; if we are bound to



act *as though* the end of all earthly concerns may come "at cockcrowing or at midday," then to work for distant earthly objects is the part of a fool or of an unbeliever.

I found a wonderful dulness in many persons on this important subject. Wholly careless to ask what was the true apostolic doctrine, they insisted that "Death is to us *practically* the coming of the Lord," and were amazed at my seeing so much emphasis in the other view. This comes of the abominable selfishness preached as religion. If I were to labour at some useful work for ten years, —say, at clearing forest land, laying out a farm, and building a house,—and were then to die, I should leave my work to my successors, and it would not be lost. Some men work for higher, some for lower, earthly ends; ("in a great house there are many vessels, &c. ;") but all the results are valuable, if there is a chance of transmitting them to those who follow us. But if all is to be very shortly burnt up, it is then folly to exert ourselves for such objects. To the dead man, (it is said,) the cases are but one. This is to the purpose, if self absorbs all our heart; away from the purpose, if we are to work for unselfish ends.

Nothing can be clearer, than that the New Testament is entirely pervaded by the doctrine,—sometimes explicitly stated, sometimes unceremoniously assumed,—that earthly things are very speedily to come to an end, and *therefore* are not worthy of our high affections and deep interest. Hence, when

thoroughly imbued with this persuasion, I looked with mournful pity on a great mind wasting its energies on any distant aim of this earth. For a statesman to talk about providing for future generations, sounded to me as a melancholy avowal of unbelief. To devote good talents to write history or investigate nature, was simple waste: for at the Lord's coming, history and science would no longer be learned by these feeble appliances of ours. Thus an inevitable deduction from the doctrine of the apostles, was, that "we must work for speedy results only." *Vitæ summa brevis spem nos vetat inchoare longam.* I *then* accepted the doctrine, in profound obedience to the absolutely infallible system of precepts. I *now* see that the falsity and mischief of the doctrine is one of the very many disproofs of the assumed, but unverified infallibility. However, the hold which the apostolic belief then took of me, subjected my conscience to the exhortations of the Irish clergyman, whenever he inculcated that the highest Christian must necessarily decline the pursuit of science, knowledge, art, history,—except so far as any of these things might be made useful tools for immediate spiritual results.

Under the stimulus to my imagination given by this gentleman's character, the desire, which from a boy I had more or less nourished, of becoming a teacher of Christianity *to the heathen*, took stronger and stronger hold of me. I saw that I was shut out from the ministry of the Church of England, and knew not how to seek connection with Dis-

senters. I had met one eminent Quaker, but was offended by the violent and obviously false interpretations by which he tried to get rid of the two Sacraments; and I thought there was affectation involved in the forms which the doctrine of the Spirit took with him. Besides, I had not been prepossessed by those Dissenters whom I had heard speak at the Bible Society. I remember that one of them talked in pompous measured tones of voice, and with much stereotype phraseology, about "the Bible only, the religion of Protestants:" altogether it did not seem to me that there was at all so much of nature and simple truth in them as in Church clergymen. I also had a vague, but strong idea that all Dissenting churches assumed some special, narrow and sectarian basis. The question indeed arose: "Was I *at liberty* to preach to the heathen without ordination?" but I with extreme ease answered in the affirmative. To teach a Church, of course needs the sanction of the church: no man can assume pastoral rights without assent from other parties: but to speak to those without, is obviously a natural right, with which the Church can have nothing to do. And herewith all the precedents of the New Testament so obviously agreed, that I had not a moment's disquiet on this head.

At the same time, when asked by one to whom I communicated my feelings, "whether I felt that I had *a call* to preach to the heathen," I replied: I had not the least consciousness of it, and knew not what was meant by such language. All that I

knew, was, that I was willing and anxious to do any thing in my power either to teach or to help others in teaching, if only I could find out the way. That after eighteen hundred years no farther progress should have been made towards the universal spread of Christianity, appeared a scandalous reproach on Christendom. Is it not perhaps, because those who are in Church office cannot go, and the mass of the laity think it no business of theirs? If a persecution fell on England, and thousands were driven into exile, and, like those who were scattered in Stephen's persecution, "went every where preaching the word,"—might not this be the conversion of the world, as indeed that began the conversion of the Gentiles? But the laity leave all to the clergy, and the clergy have more than enough to do.

About this time I heard of another remarkable man, whose name was already before the public, —Mr. Groves,—who had written a tract called *Christian Devotedness*, on the duty of devoting all worldly property for the cause of Christ and utterly renouncing the attempt to amass money. In pursuance of this, he was going to Persia as a teacher of Christianity. I read his tract, and was inflamed with the greatest admiration; judging immediately that this was the man whom I should rejoice to aid or serve. For a scheme of this nature alone appeared to combine with the views which I had been gradually consolidating concerning the practical relation of a Christian Church to Christian



Evidences. On this very important subject it is requisite to speak in detail.

---

The Christian Evidences are an essential part of the course of religious study prescribed at Oxford, and they had engaged from an early period a large share of my attention. Each treatise on the subject, taken by itself, appeared to me to have great argumentative force; but when I tried to grasp them all together in a higher act of thought, I was sensible of a certain confusion, and inability to reconcile their fundamental assumptions. *One* either formally stated, or virtually assumed, that the deepest basis of all religious knowledge was the testimony of sense to some fact, which is ascertained to be miraculous when examined by the light of Physics or Physiology: and that we must, at least in a great degree, distrust and abandon our moral convictions or auguries, at the bidding of sensible miracle. *Another* treatise assumed that men's moral feelings and beliefs are on the whole the most trustworthy thing to be found; and starting from them as from a known and ascertained foundation, proceeded to glorify Christianity because of its expanding, strengthening and beautifying all that we know by conscience to be morally right. That the former argument, if ever so valid, was still too learned and scholastic, not for the vulgar only, but for every man in his times of



moral trial, I felt instinctively persuaded: yet my intellect could not wholly dispense with it, and my belief in the depravity of the moral understanding of men inclined me to go some way in defending it. To endeavour to combine the two arguments by saying, that they were adapted to different states of mind, was plausible; yet it conceded, that neither of the two went to the bottom of human thought, or showed what were the real *fixed points* of man's knowledge; without knowing which, we are in perpetual danger of mere *argumentum ad hominem*, or in fact, arguing in a circle;—as to prove miracles from doctrine, and doctrine from miracles. I however conceived, that the most logical minds among Christians would contend that there was another solution; which in 1827 I committed to paper in nearly the following words.

“May it not be doubted, whether Leland sees the real circumstance that makes a revelation necessary?

“No revelation is needed to inform us,—of the invisible power and deity of God; that we are bound to worship Him; that we are capable of sinning against Him and liable to his just judgment; nay, that we have sinned, and that we find in nature marks of his displeasure against sin; and yet, that He is merciful. St. Paul and our Lord show us that these things are knowable by reason. The ignorance of the heathens is *judicial blindness*, to punish their obstinate rejection of the true God.

“But a revelation *is* needed to convey a SPECIAL message, such as this: that God has provided an

Atonement for our sins, has deputed his own Son to become Head of the redeemed human family, and intends to raise those who believe in Him to a future and eternal life of bliss. These are external truths, (for 'who can believe, unless one be sent to preach them?') and are not knowable by any reasonings drawn from nature. They transcend natural analogies and moral or spiritual experience. To reveal them, a specific communication must be accorded to us: and on this the necessity for miracle turns."

Thus, in my view, at that time, the materials of the Bible were in theory divisible into two portions: concerning the *one*, (which I called Natural Religion,) it not only was not presumptuous, but it was absolutely essential, to form an independent judgment; for this was the real basis of all faith: concerning the *other*, (which I called Revealed Religion) our business was, not to criticize the message, but to examine the credentials of the messenger; and,—after the most unbiassed possible examination of these,—then, if they proved sound, to receive his communication reverently and unquestioningly.

Such was the theory with which I came from Oxford to Ireland; but I was hindered from working out its legitimate results by the overpowering influence of the Irish clergyman; who, while pressing the authority of every letter of the Scripture with an unshrinking vehemence that I never saw surpassed, yet, with a common inconsistency, showed

more than indifference towards learned historical and critical evidence on the side of Christianity; and indeed, unmercifully exposed erudition to scorn, both by caustic reasoning, and by irrefragable quotation of texts. I constantly had occasion to admire the power with which he laid hold of the moral side of every controversy; whether he was reasoning against Romanism, against the High Church, against learned religion or philosophic scepticism: and in this matter his practical axiom was, that the advocate of truth had to address himself to the *conscience* of the other party, and if possible, make him feel that there was a moral and spiritual superiority against him. Such doctrine, when joined with an inculcation of man's natural blindness and total depravity, was any thing but clearing to my intellectual perceptions: in fact, I believe that for some years I did not recover from the dimness and confusion which he spread over them. But in my entire inability to explain away the texts which spoke with scorn of worldly wisdom, philosophy, and learning, on the one hand; and the obvious certainty, on the other, that no historical evidence for miracle was possible except by the aid of learning;—I for the time abandoned this side of Christian Evidence,—not as invalid, but as too unwieldy a weapon for use,—and looked to direct moral evidence alone. And now rose the question, How could such moral evidence become appreciable to heathens and Mohammedans?

I felt distinctly enough, that mere talk could

bring no conviction, and would be interpreted by the actions and character of the speaker. While nations called Christian are only known to heathens as great conquerors, powerful avengers, sharp traders,—often lax in morals and apparently without religion,—the fine theories of a Christian teacher would be as vain to convert a Mohammedan or Hindoo to Christianity, as the soundness of Seneca's moral treatises to convert me to Roman Paganism. Christendom has to earn a new reputation before Christian precepts will be thought to stand in any essential or close relation with the mystical doctrines of Christianity. I could see no other way to this, but by an entire Church being formed of new elements on a heathen soil:—a church, in which by no means all should be preachers, but all should be willing to do for all whatever occasion required. Such a church had I read of among the Moravians in Greenland and in South Africa. I imagined a little colony, so animated by primitive faith, love and disinterestedness, that the collective moral influence of all might interpret and enforce the words of the few who preached. Only in this way did it appear to me that preaching to the heathen could be attended with success. In fact, whatever success had been attained, seemed to come only after many years, when the natives had gained experience in the characters of the Christian family around them.

When I had returned to Oxford, I induced the Irish clergyman to visit the University, and intro-



duced him to many of my equals in age and juniors. Most striking was it to see how instantaneously he assumed the place of universal father-confessor, as if he had been a known and long-trusted friend. His insight into character, and tenderness pervading his austerity, so opened young men's hearts, that day after day there was no end of secret closetings with him. I began to see the prospect of so considerable a movement of mind, as might lead many in the same direction as myself; and *if* it was by a collective Church that Mohammedans were to be taught, the only way was for each separately to be led to the same place by the same spiritual influence. As Groves was a magnet to draw me, so might I draw others. In no other way could a pure and efficient Church be formed. If we waited, as with worldly policy, to make up a complete colony before leaving England, we should fail of getting the right men: we should pack them together by a mechanical process, instead of leaving them to be united by vital affinities. Thus actuated, and other circumstances conducing, in September 1830, with some Irish friends, I set out to join Mr. Groves at Bagdad. What I might do there, I knew not. I did not go as a minister of religion, and I every where pointedly disowned the assumption of this character, even down to the colour of my dress. But I thought I knew many ways in which I might be of service, and I was prepared to act according to circumstances.

---



Perhaps the strain of practical life must in any case before long have broken the chain by which the Irish clergyman unintentionally held me ; but all possible influence from him was now cut off by separation. The dear companions of my travels no more aimed to guide my thoughts, than I theirs : neither ambition nor suspicion found place in our hearts ; and my mind was thus able again without disturbance to develop its own tendencies.

I had become distinctly aware, that the modern Churches in general by no means hold the truth as conceived of by the apostles. In the matter of the Sabbath and of the Mosaic Law, of Infant Baptism, of Episcopacy, of the doctrine of the Lord's return, I had successively found the prevalent Protestantism to be unapostolic. Hence arose in me a conscious and continuous effort, to read the New Testament with fresh eyes and without bias, and so to take up the real doctrines of the heavenly and everlasting Gospel.

In studying the narrative of John I was strongly impressed by the fact, that the glory and greatness of the Son of God is constantly ascribed to the will and pleasure of the Father. I had been accustomed to hear this explained of his *mediatorial* greatness only, but this now looked to me like a make-shift and to want the simplicity of truth ;—an impression which grew deeper with closer examination. The emphatic declaration of Christ, "My Father is greater than I ;" especially arrested my attention. Could I really expound this as meaning, "My Father, the Supreme

God, is greater than I am *if you look solely to my human nature?*" Such a truism can scarcely have deserved such emphasis. Did the disciples need to be taught that God was greater than man? Surely on the contrary, the Saviour must have meant to say: "*Divine as I am*, yet my heavenly Father is greater than I, *even when you take cognizance of my divine nature.*" I did not then know, that my comment was exactly that of the most orthodox Fathers; I rather thought they were against me, but for them I did not care much. I revered the doctrine of the Trinity, as something vital to the soul; but felt that to love the Fathers or the Athanasian Creed more than the Gospel of John would be a supremely miserable superstition. However, that Creed states that there is no inequality between the Three Persons: in John it became increasingly clear to me that the divine Son is unequal to the Father. To say that "the Son of God" meant "Jesus as man," was a preposterous evasion: for there is no higher title for the Second Person of the Trinity than this very one,—Son of God. Now in the 5th Chapter, when the Jews accused Jesus "of making himself equal to God," by calling himself Son of God, Jesus even hastens to protest against the inference as a misrepresentation,—beginning with: "The Son can do nothing of himself:" and proceeds elaborately to ascribe all his greatness to the Father's will. In fact the Son is emphatically "he who is sent," and the Father is

“he who sent him:” and all would feel the deep impropriety of trying to exchange these phrases. The Son who is sent,—sent, not *after* he was humbled to become man, but *in order to* be so humbled,—was NOT EQUAL TO, but LESS THAN, the Father who sent him. To this I found the whole Gospel of John to bear witness; and with this conviction, the truth and honour of the Athanasian Creed fell to the ground. One of its tenets was proved false; and yet it dared to utter anathemas on all who rejected it!

I afterwards remembered my old thought, that we must surely understand *our own words*, when we venture to speak at all about divine mysteries. Having gained boldness to gaze steadily on the topic, I at length saw that the compiler of the Athanasian Creed did *not* understand his own words. If any one speaks of *three men*, all that he means is, “three objects of thought, of whom each separately may be called Man.” So also, all that could possibly be meant by *three gods*, is, “three objects of thought, of whom each separately may be called God.” To avow the last statement, as the Creed does, and yet repudiate Three Gods, is to object to the phrase, yet confess to the only meaning which the phrase can convey. Thus the Creed really teaches polytheism, but saves orthodoxy by forbidding any one to call it by its true name.—Or to put the matter otherwise: it teaches three Divine Persons, and denies three Gods; and leaves us to

guess what else is a Divine Person but a God, or a God but a Divine Person. Who then can deny that this intolerant creed is a malignant riddle?

That there is nothing in the Scripture about Trinity in Unity and Unity in Trinity, I had long observed; and the total absence of such phraseology had left on me a general persuasion that the Church had systematized too much. But in my study of John I was now arrested by a text, which showed me how exceedingly far from a *Tri-unity* was the Trinity of that Gospel,—if Trinity it be. Namely, in his last prayer, Jesus addresses to his Father the words: “This is life eternal, that they may know *Thee, the only True God*, and Jesus Christ, whom thou hast sent.” I became amazed, as I considered these words more and more attentively, and without prejudice; and I began to understand how prejudice, when embalmed with reverence, blinds the mind. Why had I never before seen what is here so plain, that the *One God* of Jesus was not a Trinity, but was *the First Person* of the ecclesiastical Trinity?

But on a fuller search, I found this to be Paul’s doctrine also: for in 1 Corinth. viii. when discussing the subject of Polytheism, he says that “though there be to the heathen many that are called Gods, yet to us there is but *One God*, the Father, *of* whom are all things; and *One Lord*, Jesus Christ, *by* whom are all things.” Thus he defines Monotheism to consist in holding the person of the Father to be the One God; although this, if any,



should have been the place for a "Trinity in Unity."

But did I proceed to deny the Divinity of the Son? By no means: I conceived of him as in the highest and fullest sense divine, short of being Father and not Son. I now believed that by the phrase "only begotten Son," John, and indeed Christ himself, meant to teach us that there was an impassable chasm between him and all creatures, in that he had a true, though a derived divine nature; as indeed the Nicene Creed puts the contrast, he was "begotten, not made." Thus all Divine glory dwells in the Son, but it is *because* the Father has willed it. A year or more afterward, when I had again the means of access to books, and consulted that very common Oxford book, "Pearson on the Creed," (for which I had felt so great a distaste, that I never before read it)—I found this to be the undoubted doctrine of the great Nicene and Post Nicene Fathers, who laid much emphasis on two statements, which with the modern Church are idle and dead, viz. that "the Son was *begotten* of his Father *before all worlds*," and that "the Holy Spirit *proceedeth from* the Father and the Son." In the view of the old Church, the Father alone was the Fountain of Deity,—(and *therefore* fitly called, The One God,—and, the Only True God,)—while the Deity of the other two persons was real, yet derived and subordinate. Moreover I found in Gregory Nazianzen and others, that to



confess this derivation of the Son and Spirit and the underivedness of the Father alone, was in their view quite essential to save Monotheism ; the *One* God being the underived Father.

Although in my own mind all doubt as to the doctrine of John and Paul on the main question seemed to be quite cleared away from the time that I dwelt on their explanation of Monotheism, this in no respect agitated me, or even engaged me in any farther search. There was nothing to force me into controversy, or make this one point of truth unduly preponderant. I concealed none of my thoughts from my companions ; and concerning them I will only say, that whether they did or did not feel acquiescence, they behaved towards me with all the affection and all the equality which I would have wished myself to maintain, had the case been inverted. I was however sometimes uneasy, when the thought crossed my mind,—“What if we, like Henry Martyn, were charged with Polytheism by Mohammedans, and were forced to defend ourselves by explaining in detail our doctrine of the Trinity? *Perhaps* no two of us would explain it alike, and this would expose Christian doctrine to contempt.” Then farther it came across me : How very remarkable it is, that the Jews, those strict Monotheists, never seem to have attacked the apostles for polytheism ! It would have been so plausible an imputation, one that the instinct of party would so readily suggest, if there had been any external form of doctrine to countenance it.

Surely it is transparent that the Apostles did not teach as Dr. Waterland. I had always felt a great repugnance to the argumentations concerning the *Personality* of the Holy Spirit; no doubt from an inward sense, however dimly confessed, that they were all words without meaning. For the disputant who maintains this dogma, tells us in the very next breath that *Person* has not in this connection its common signification; so that he is elaborately enforcing upon us we know not what. That the Spirit of God meant in the New Testament *God in the heart*, had long been to me a sufficient explanation: and who by logic or metaphysics will carry us beyond this?

While we were at Aleppo, I one day got into religious discourse with a Mohammedan carpenter, which left on me a lasting impression. Among other matters, I was peculiarly desirous of disabusing him of the current notion of his people, that our gospels are spurious narratives of late date. I found great difficulty of expression; but the man listened to me with much attention, and I was encouraged to exert myself. He waited patiently till I had done, and then spoke to the following effect: "I will tell you, Sir, how the case stands. God has given to you English a great many good gifts. You make fine ships, and sharp penknives, and good cloth and cottons; and you have rich nobles and brave soldiers; and you write and print many learned books: (dictionaries and grammars:) all this is of God. But there is one thing that

God has withheld from you, and has revealed to us; and that is, the knowledge of the true religion, by which one may be saved." When he thus ignored my argument, (which was probably quite unintelligible to him,) and delivered his simple protest, I was silenced and at the same time amused. But the more I thought it over, the more instruction I saw in the case. His position towards me, was exactly that of a humble Christian towards an unbelieving philosopher; nay, that of the early Apostles or Jewish prophets towards the proud, cultivated, worldly wise and powerful heathen. This not only showed the vanity of any argument to him, except one purely addressed to his moral and spiritual faculties; but it also indicated to me that Ignorance has its spiritual self-sufficiency as well as Erudition; and that if there is a Pride of Reason, so is there a Pride of Unreason. But though this rested in my memory, it was long before I worked out all the results of that thought.

Another matter brought me some disquiet. An Englishman of rather low tastes who came to Aleppo at this time, called upon us; and as he was civilly received, repeated his visit more than once. Being unencumbered with fastidiousness, this person before long made various rude attacks on the truth and authority of the Christian religion, and drew me on to defend it. What I had heard of the moral life of the speaker, made me feel that his was not the mind to have insight into divine truth; and I desired to divert the argument from external topics,

and bring it to a point in which there might be a chance of touching his conscience. But I found this to be impossible. He returned actively to the assault against Christianity, and I could not bear to hear him vent historical falsehoods and misrepresentations damaging to the Christian cause, without contradicting them. He was a halfeducated man; and I easily confuted him to my own entire satisfaction: but he was not either abashed or convinced; and at length withdrew as one victorious.—On reflecting over this, I felt painfully, that if a Moslem had been present and had understood all that had been said, he would have remained in total uncertainty which of the two disputants was in the right: for the controversy had turned on points wholly remote from the sphere of his knowledge or thought. Yet to have declined the battle, would have seemed like conscious weakness on my part. Thus the historical side of my religion, though essential to it, and though resting on valid evidence, (as I unhesitatingly believed,) exposed me to attacks in which I might incur virtual defeat or disgrace, but in which from the nature of the case I could never win an available victory. This was to me very disagreeable, yet I saw not my way out of the entanglement.

Two years after I left England, a hope was conceived that more friends might be induced to join us; and I returned home from Bagdad with the commission to bring this about, if there were suitable persons disposed for it. On my return, and



while yet in quarantine on the coast of England, I received an uncomfortable letter from a most intimate spiritual friend, to the effect, that painful reports had been every where spread abroad against my soundness in the faith. The channel by which they had come was indicated to me; but my friend expressed a firm hope, that when I had explained myself, it would all prove to be nothing.

Now began a time of deep and critical trial to me and to my Creed; a time hard to speak of to the public; yet without a pretty full notice of it, the rest of the account would be quite unintelligible.

The Tractarian movement was just commencing in 1833. My brother was taking a position, in which he was bound to show that he could sacrifice private love to ecclesiastical dogma; and upon learning that I had spoken at some small meetings of religious people, (which he interpreted, I believe, to be an assuming of the Priest's office,) he separated himself entirely from my private friendship and acquaintance. To the public this may have some interest, as indicating the disturbing excitement which animated that cause: but my reason for naming the fact here is solely to exhibit the practical positions into which I myself was thrown. In my brother's conduct there was not a shade of unkindness, and I have not a thought of complaining of it. My distress was naturally great, until I had fully ascertained from him that I had given no personal offence. But the mischief of it went deeper. It practically cut me off from other mem-



bers of my family, who were living in his house, and whose state of feeling towards me, through separation and my own agitations of mind, I for some time totally mistook.

I had however myself slighted relationship in comparison with Christian brotherhood;—*sectarian* brotherhood, some may call it;—I perhaps had none but myself to blame: but in the far more painful occurrences which were to succeed one another for many months together, I was blameless. Each successive friend who asked explanations of my alledged heresy, was satisfied,—or at least left me with that impression,—after hearing me: not one who met me face to face had a word to reply to the plain Scriptures which I quoted. Yet when I was gone away, one after another was turned against me by somebody else whom I had not yet met or did not know: for, in every theological conclave which deliberates on joint action, the most bigoted seems always to prevail.

I will trust my pen to only one specimen of details. The Irish clergyman was not able to meet me. He wrote a very desultory letter of grave alarm and inquiry, stating that he had heard that I was endeavouring to sound the divine nature by the miserable plummet of human philosophy,—with much beside that I felt to be mere commonplace which every body might address to every body who differed from him. I however replied in the frankest, most cordial and trusting tone, assuring him that I was infinitely far from imagining that I could

“by searching understand God;” on the contrary, concerning his higher mysteries, I felt I knew absolutely nothing but what he revealed to me in his word; but in studying this word, I found John and Paul to declare the Father, and not the Trinity, to be the One God. Referring him to John xvii. 3, 1 Corinth. viii. 5, 6, I fondly believed that one so “subject to the word” and so resolutely renouncing man’s authority *in order that* he might serve God, would immediately see as I saw. But I assured him in all the depth of affection, that I felt how much fuller insight he had than I into all divine truth; and not he only, but others to whom I alluded; and that if I was in error, I only desired to be taught more truly; and either with him, or at his feet, to learn of God. He replied, to my amazement and distress, in a letter of much tenderness, but which was to the effect,—that if I allowed the Spirit of God to be with him rather than with me, it was wonderful that I set my single judgment against the mind of the Spirit and of the whole Church of God; and that as for admitting into Christian communion one who held my doctrine, it had this absurdity, that while I was in such a state of belief, it was my duty to anathematize *them* as idolaters.—Severe as was the shock given me by this letter, I wrote again most lovingly, humbly and imploringly: for I still adored him, and could have given him my right hand or my right eye,—any thing but my conscience. I showed him that if it was a matter of action, I would submit; for I

unfeignedly believed that he had more of the Spirit of God than I: but over my secret convictions I had no power. I was shut up to obey and believe God rather than man, and from the nature of the case, the profoundest respect for my brother's judgment could not in itself alter mine. As to the whole *Church* being against me, I did not know what that meant: I was willing to accept the Nicene Creed, and this I thought ought to be a sufficient defensive argument against the Church. His answer was decisive;—he was exceedingly surprized at my recurring to mere ecclesiastical creeds, as though they could have the slightest weight; and he must insist on my acknowledging, that, in the two texts quoted, the word Father meant the Trinity, if I desired to be in any way recognized as holding the truth.

The Father meant the Trinity!! For the first time I perceived, that so vehement a champion of the sufficiency of the Scripture, so staunch an opposer of Creeds and Churches, was wedded to an extra-Scriptural creed of his own, by which he tested the spiritual state of his brethren. I was in despair, and like a man thunderstruck. I had nothing more to say. Two more letters from the same hand I saw, the latter of which was, to threaten some new acquaintances who were kind to me, (persons wholly unknown to him,) that if they did not desist from sheltering me and break off intercourse, they should, as far as his influence went, themselves every where be cut off from Christian communion

and recognition. This will suffice to indicate the sort of social persecution, through which, after a succession of struggles, I found myself separated from persons whom I had trustingly admired, and on whom I had most counted for union : with whom I fondly believed myself bound up for eternity ; of whom some were my previously intimate friends, while for others even on slight acquaintance I would have performed menial offices and thought myself honoured ; whom I still looked upon as the blessed and excellent of the earth, and the special favourites of heaven ; whose company, (though oftentimes they were considerably my inferiors either in rank or in knowledge and cultivation,) I would have chosen in preference to that of nobles ; whom I loved solely because I thought them to love God, and of whom I asked nothing, but that they would admit me as the meanest and most frail of disciples. My heart was ready to break : I wished for a woman's soul, that I might weep in floods. Oh Dogma ! Dogma ! how dost thou trample under foot love, truth, conscience, justice ! Was ever a Moloch worse than thou ? burn me at the stake ; then Christ will receive me, and saints beyond the grave will love me, though the saints here know me not. But now I am alone in the world : I can trust no one. The new acquaintances who barely tolerate me, and old friends whom reports have not reached, (if such there be,) may turn against me with animosity tomorrow, as those have done from whom I could least have



imagined it. Where is union? where is the Church, which was to convert the heathen?

This was not my only reason, yet it was soon a sufficient and at last an overwhelming reason against returning to the East. The pertinacity of the attacks made on me, and on all who dared to hold by me in a certain connection, showed that I could no longer be any thing but a thorn in the side of my friends abroad; nay, I was unable to predict, how they themselves might change towards me. The idea of a Christian Church propagating Christianity while divided against itself, was ridiculous. Never indeed had I had the most remote idea, that my dear friends there had been united to me by agreement in intellectual propositions; nor could I yet believe it. I remembered a saying of the noble-hearted Groves: "Talk of loving me while I agree with them! Give me men that will love me when I differ from them and contradict them: those will be the men to build up a true Church." I asked myself,—was I then possibly different from all? With me,—and, as I had thought, with all my spiritual friends,—intellectual dogma was not the test of spirituality. A hundred times over had I heard the Irish clergyman emphatically enunciate the contrary. Nothing was clearer in his preaching, talk and writing, than that Salvation was a present real experienced fact; a saving of the soul from the dominion of baser desires and an inward union of it in love and homage to Christ, who, as the centre



of all perfection, glory and beauty, was the revelation of God to the heart. He who was thus saved, could not help knowing that he was reconciled, pardoned, beloved; and therefore he rejoiced in God his Saviour: indeed to imagine joy without this personal assurance and direct knowledge, was quite preposterous. But on the other hand, the soul thus spiritually minded has a keen sense of like qualities in others. It cannot but discern, when another is tender in conscience, disinterested, forbearing, scornful of untruth and baseness, and esteeming nothing so much as the fruits of the Spirit: accordingly, John did not hesitate to say: "*We know* that we have passed from death unto life, *because* we love the brethren." Our doctrine certainly had been, that the Church was the assembly of the saved, gathered by the vital attractions of God's Spirit; that in it no one was Lord or Teacher, but one was our Teacher, even Christ: that as long as we had no earthly bribes to tempt men to join us, there was not much cause to fear false brethren; for if we were heavenly minded, and these were earthly, they would soon dislike and shun us. Why should we need to sit in judgment and excommunicate them, except in the case of publicly scandalous conduct?

It is true, that I fully believed certain intellectual convictions to be essential to genuine spirituality: for instance, if I had heard that a person unknown to me did not believe in the Atonement of Christ, I should have inferred that he had no spiritual life.

But if the person had come under my direct knowledge, my *theory* was, on no account to reject him on a question of Creed, but in any case to receive all those whom Christ had received, all on whom the Spirit of God had come down, just as the Church at Jerusalem did in regard to admitting the Gentiles, Acts xi. 18. Nevertheless, was not this perhaps a theory pleasant to talk of, but too good for practice? I could not tell; for it had never been so severely tried. I remembered however, that when I had thought it right to be baptized as an adult, (regarding my baptism as an infant to have been a mischievous fraud,) the sole confession of faith which I made, or would endure, at a time when my "orthodoxy" was unimpeached, was\*: "I believe that Jesus Christ is the Son of God:" to deny which, and claim to be acknowledged as within the pale of the Christian Church, seemed to be an absurdity. On the whole therefore, it did not appear to me that this Church-theory had been hollow-hearted with *me* nor unscriptural, nor in any way unpractical; but that *others* were still infected with the leaven of creeds and formal tests, with which they reproached the old Church.

Were there then no other hearts than mine, aching under miserable bigotry, and refreshed only when they tasted in others the true fruits of the Spirit,—“love, joy, peace, long-suffering, gentleness, goodness, fidelity, meekness, self-control?”—To

\* Borrowed from Acts viii. 37.

imagine this, was to suppose myself a man supernaturally favoured, an angel upon earth. I knew there must be thousands, in this very point more true-hearted than I : nay, such still might some be, whose names I went over with myself : but I had no heart for more experiments. When such a man as he, the only mortal to whom I had looked up as to an apostle, had unhesitatingly, unrelentingly, and without one mark that his conscience was not on his side, flung away all his own precepts, his own theories, his own magnificent rebukes of Formalism and human Authority, and had made *himself* the slave and *me* the victim of these old and ever living tyrants,—whom henceforth could I trust ? The resolution then rose in me, to love all good men from a distance, but never again to count on permanent friendship with any one, who was not himself cast out as a heretic.

Nor in fact did the storm of distress which these events inflicted on me, subside, until I willingly received the task of withstanding it, as God's trial whether I was faithful. As soon as I gained strength to say, "O my Lord, I will bear not this only, *but more also* \*, for thy sake, for conscience and for truth,"—my sorrows vanished, until the next blow and the next inevitable pang. At last my heart had died within me ; the bitterness of death was past : I was satisfied to be hated by the saints, and to

\* Virgil (*Æneid* vi.) gives the Stoical side of the same thought :

Tu ne cede malis, sed contra audentior ito.

reckon that those who had not yet turned against me would not bear me much longer.—Then I conceived the belief, that if we may not make a heaven on earth for ourselves out of the love of saints, it is in order that we may find a truer heaven in God's love.

The question about this time much vexed me, what to do about receiving the Holy Supper of the Lord, the great emblem of brotherhood, communion and church-connection. At one time I argued with myself, that it became an unmeaning form, when not partaken of in mutual love; that I could never again have free intercourse of heart with any one;—why then use the rite of communion, where there is no communion? But on the other hand, I thought it a mode of confessing Christ, and that permanently to disuse it was an unfaithfulness. In the Church of England I could have been easy as far as the communion formulary was concerned; but to the entire system I had contracted an incurable repugnance, as worldly, hypocritical and an evil counterfeit. I desired therefore to creep into some obscure congregation, and there wait till my mind had ripened as to the right path in circumstances so perplexing. I will only briefly say, that I at last settled among some who had previously been total strangers to me. To their good will and simple kindness I feel myself indebted: peace be to them! Thus I gained time, and repose of mind, which I greatly needed.

From the day that I had mentally decided on



total inaction as to all ecclesiastical questions, I count the termination of my Second Period. My ideal of a spiritual Church had blown up in the most sudden and heartbreaking way; overpowering me with shame, when the violence of sorrow was past. There was no change whatever in my own judgment, yet a total change of action was inevitable: that I was on the eve of a great transition of mind, I did not at all suspect. Hitherto my reverence for the authority of the whole and indivisible *Bible*, was overruling and complete. I never really had dared to criticize it: I did not even exact from it self-consistency. If two passages appeared to be opposed, and I could not evade the difficulty by the doctrine of Development and Progress, I inferred that there was *some* mode of conciliation, unknown to me; and that perhaps the depth of truth in divine things could ill be stated in our imperfect language. But from the man who dared to interpose *a human comment* on the Scripture, I most rigidly demanded a clear, single, self-consistent sense. If he did not know what he meant, why did he not hold his peace? If he did know, why did he so speak as to puzzle us? It was for this uniform refusal to allow of self-contradiction, that it was more than once sadly predicted of me at Oxford that I should become "a Socinian:" yet I did not apply this logical measure to any compositions but those which were avowedly "uninspired" and human.

As to moral criticism, my mind was practically



prostrate before the Bible. By the end of this period I had persuaded myself that morality so changes with the commands of God, that we can scarcely attach any idea of *immutability* to it. I am moreover ashamed to tell any one how I spoke and acted against my own common sense under this influence, and when I was thought a fool, prayed that I might think it an honour to become a fool for Christ's sake. Against no doctrine did I dare to bring moral objections, except that of "Reprobation." To Election, to Preventing Grace, to the Fall and Original Sin of man, to the Atonement, to Eternal Punishment, I reverently submitted my understanding: though as to the last, new inquiries had just at this crisis been opening on me. Reprobation however I always repudiated with great vigour; of which I shall presently speak. That was the full amount of my original thought; and in it I preserved entire reverence for the sacred writers.

As to physical miracles, scarcely any thing staggered me. I received the strangest and the meanest miracles of Scripture, with the same unhesitating faith, as if I had never understood a proposition of physical philosophy, nor a chapter of Hume and Gibbon.

## THIRD PERIOD :

CALVINISM ABANDONED, AS NEITHER EVANGELICAL  
NOR TRUE.

AFTER the excitement was past, I learned many things from the events which have been named.

First, I had found that the class of Christians with whom I had been joined, had exploded the old Creeds in favour of another of their own, which was never given me upon authority, and yet was constantly slipping out, in the words, *Jesus is Jehovah*. It appeared to me certain that this would have been denounced as the Sabellian heresy by Athanasius and his contemporaries. I did not wish to run down Sabellians, much less to excommunicate them, if they would give me equality: but I felt it intensely unjust, when my adherence to the Nicene Creed was my real offence, that I should be treated as setting up some novel wickedness against all Christendom, and slandered by vague imputations which reached far and far beyond my power of answering or explaining. Mysterious aspersions were made even against my moral\* character, and

\* I afterwards learned that some of those gentlemen esteemed boldness of thought "a lust of the mind," and as such, an immorality. This enables them to persuade themselves that they do not reject a

were alledged to me as additional reasons for refusing communion with me; and when I demanded a tribunal, and that my accuser would meet me face to face, all inquiry was refused, on the plea that it was needless and undesirable. I had much reason to believe that a very small number of persons had constituted themselves my judges, and used against me all the airs of the Universal Church; the many lending themselves easily to swell the cry of heresy, when they have little personal acquaintance with the party attacked. Moreover when I was being condemned as in error, I in vain asked to be told what was the truth. "I accept the Scripture: that is not enough. I accept the Nicene Creed: that is not enough. Give me then your formula: where, what is it?" But no! those who thought it their duty to condemn me, disclaimed the pretension of "making a Creed" when I asked for one. They reprobated my interpretation of Scripture, as against that of the whole Church, but would not undertake to expound that of the Church. I felt convinced, that they could not have agreed themselves as to what was right: all that they could agree upon was that I was wrong. Could I have borne to recriminate, I believed that I could have forced one of them to condemn another: but oh! was divine truth sent us for discord and for condemnation? I sickened at the idea of a Church Tribunal, where

"heretic" for a matter of *opinion*, but for that which they have a right to call *immoral*. What immorality was imputed to me, I was not distinctly informed.

none has any authority to judge, and yet to my extreme embarrassment I saw that no Church can safely dispense with judicial forms and other worldly apparatus for defending the reputation of individuals. At least none of the national and less spiritual institutions would have been so very unequitable towards me.

This idea enlarged itself into another,—*that spirituality is no adequate security for sound moral discernment.* These alienated friends did not know they were acting unjustly, cruelly, crookedly, or they would have hated themselves for it: they thought they were doing God service. The fervour of their love towards him was probably greater than mine; yet this did not make them superior to prejudice, or sharpen their logical faculties to see, that they were idolizing words to which they attached no ideas. On several occasions I had distinctly perceived, how serious alarm I gave by resolutely refusing to admit any shiftings and shufflings of language. I felt convinced, that if I would but have contradicted myself two or three times, and then have added, “That is the mystery of it,” I could have passed as orthodox with many. I had been charged with a proud and vain determination to pry into divine mysteries, barely because I would not confess to propositions, the meaning of which was to me doubtful,—or say and unsay in consecutive breaths. It was too clear, that a doctrine which muddles the understanding perverts also the power of moral discernment. If I had



committed some flagrant sin, they would have given me a fair and honourable trial; but where they could not give me a public hearing, nor yet leave me unimpeached, without danger of (what they called) my infecting the Church, there was nothing left but to hunt me out unscrupulously.

Unscrupulously! did not this one word characterize *all* religious persecution? and then my mind wandered back over the whole melancholy tale of what is called Christian history. When Archbishop Cranmer overpowered the reluctance of young Edward VI. to burn to death the pious and innocent Joan of Kent, who moreover was as mystical and illogical as heart could wish, was Cranmer not actuated by deep religious convictions? None question his piety, yet it was an awfully wicked deed. What shall I say of Calvin, who burned Servetus? Why have I been so slow to learn, that religion is an impulse, which animates us to execute our moral judgments, but an impulse which may be half blind? These brethren believe that I may cause the eternal ruin of others: how hard then is it for them to abide faithfully by the laws of morality and respect my rights! My rights! They are of course trampled down for the public good, just as a house is blown up to stop a conflagration. Such is evidently the theory of all persecution;—which is essentially founded on *Hatred*. As Aristotle says, “He who is angry desires to punish somebody; but he who hates, desires the hated person not even to exist.” Hence they cannot



endure to see me face to face. That I may not infect the rest, they desire my non-existence; by fair means, if fair will succeed; if not, then by foul. And whence comes this monstrosity into such bosoms? Weakness of common sense, dread of the common understanding, an insufficient faith in common morality, are surely the disease: and evidently, nothing so exasperates this disease, as, consecrating religious tenets which forbid the exercise of common sense.

I now began to understand why it was peculiarly for unintelligible doctrines like Transubstantiation and the Tri-unity, that Christians had committed such execrable wickednesses. Now also for the first time I understood what had seemed not frightful only, but preternatural,—the sensualities and cruelties enacted as a part of religion in many of the old Paganisms. Religion and fanaticism are in the embryo but one and the same; to purify and elevate them we want a cultivation of the Understanding, without which our moral code may be indefinitely depraved. Natural kindness and strong sense are aids and guides, which the most spiritual man cannot afford to despise.

I became conscious that I *had* despised “mere moral men,” as they were called in the phraseology of my school. They were merged in the vague appellation of “the world,” with sinners of every class; and it was habitually assumed, if not asserted, that they were necessarily Pharisaic, because they had not been born again. For some

time after I had misgivings as to my fairness of judgment towards them, I could not disentangle myself from great bewilderment concerning their state in the sight of God: for it was an essential part of my Evangelical Creed, that (as one of the 39 Articles states it) the very good works of the unregenerate "undoubtedly have the nature of sin," as indeed the very nature with which they were born "deserveth God's wrath and damnation." I began to mourn over the unlovely conduct into which I had been betrayed by this creed, long before I could thoroughly get rid of the creed that justified it: and a considerable time had to elapse, ere my new perceptions shaped themselves distinctly into the propositions: "Morality is the end, Spirituality is the means: Religion is the handmaid to Morals: we must be spiritual, in order that we may be in the highest and truest sense moral." Then at last I saw, that the deficiency of "mere moral men" is that their morality is apt to be too external or merely negative and therefore incomplete: that the man who worships a fiend for a God may be in some sense spiritual, but his spirituality will be a devilish fanaticism, having nothing in it to admire or approve: that the moral man deserves approval or love for all the absolute good that he has attained, though there be a higher good to which he aspires not; and that the truly and rightly spiritual is he who aims at an indefinitely high moral excellence, of which God is the embodiment to his heart and soul. If the absolute

excellence of morality be denied, there is nothing for spirituality to aspire after, and nothing in God to worship. Years before I saw this as clearly as here stated, the general train of thought was very wholesome, in giving me increased kindliness of judgment towards the common world of men, who do not show any religious development. It was pleasant to me to look on an ordinary face, and see it light up into a smile, and think with myself:—"there is one heart, that will judge of me by what I am, and not by a Procrustean dogma." Nor only so, but I saw that the saints, without the world, would make a very bad world of it; and that as ballast is wanted to a ship, so the common and rather low interests, and the homely principles, rules and ways of feeling, keep the church from foundering by the intensity of her own gusts.

Some of the above thoughts took a still more definite shape, as follows. It is clear that A. B. and X. Y. would have behaved towards me more kindly, more justly and more wisely, if they had consulted their excellent strong sense and amiable natures, instead of following (what they suppose to be) the commands of the word of God. They have misinterpreted that word: true: but this very thing shows, that one may go wrong by trusting one's power of interpreting the book, rather than trusting one's common sense to judge without the book. It startled me to find, that I had exactly alighted on the Romish objection to Protestants, that an infallible book is useless, unless we have an infallible

interpreter. But it was not for some time, that, after twisting the subject in all directions to avoid it, I brought out the conclusion, that "to go against one's common sense in obedience to Scripture is a most hazardous proceeding:" for the "rule of Scripture" means to each of us nothing but his own fallible interpretation; and to sacrifice common sense to this, is to mutilate one side of our mind at the command of another side. In the Nicene age, the Bible was in people's hands, and the Spirit of God surely was not withheld: yet, I had read, in one of the Councils an insane anathema was passed: "If any one call Jesus God-man, instead of God and man, let him be accursed." Surely want of common sense, and dread of natural reason, will be confessed by our highest orthodoxy to have been the distemper of that day.

---

In all this I still remained theoretically convinced, that the contents of the Scriptures, rightly interpreted, were supreme and perfect truth; nay, I had for several years accustomed myself to speak and think as if the Bible were our sole source of all moral knowledge: nevertheless, there were limits, beyond which I did not, and could not, even attempt to blind my moral sentiment at the dictation of the Scripture; and this had peculiarly frightened (as I afterwards found) the first friend who welcomed me



from abroad. I was unable to admit the doctrine of "reprobation," as taught in the 9th chapter of Paul's Epistle to the Romans;—that "God hardens in wickedness whomever He pleases, in order that He may show his longsuffering" in putting off their condemnation to a future dreadful day: and *especially*, that to all objectors it is a sufficient confutation,—“Nay, but O man, who art thou, that repliest against God?” I told my friend, that I worshipped in God three great attributes, all independent,—Power, Goodness and Wisdom: that in order to worship Him acceptably, I must discern these *as* realities with my inmost heart, and not merely take them for granted on authority: but that the argument which was here pressed upon me was an effort to supersede the necessity of my discerning Goodness in God: it bade me simply to *infer* Goodness from Power,—that is to say, establish the doctrine, “Might makes Right;” according to which, I might unawares worship a devil. Nay, nothing so much distinguished the spiritual truth of Judaism and Christianity from abominable heathenism, as this very discernment of God's purity, justice, mercy, truth, goodness; while the Pagan worshipped mere power, and had no discernment of moral excellence; but laid down the principle, that cruelty, impurity, or caprice in a God was to be treated reverentially and called by some more decorous name. Hence, I said, it was undermining the very foundation of Christianity itself, to require belief of the validity of Rom. ix. 14–24, as my friend understood it. I



acknowledged the difficulty of the passage, and of the whole argument. I was not prepared with an interpretation; but I revered St. Paul too much, to believe it possible that he could mean any thing so obviously heathenish, as that first-sight meaning.—My friend looked grave and anxious; but I did not suspect how deeply I had shocked him, until many weeks after.

At this very time moreover, ground was broken in my mind on a new subject, by opening in a gentleman's library a presentation-copy of a Unitarian treatise against the doctrine of Eternal Punishment. It was the first Unitarian book of which I had even seen the outside, and I handled it with a timid curiosity as if by stealth. I had only time to dip into it here and there, and I should have been ashamed to possess the book; but I carried off enough to suggest important inquiry. The writer asserted that the Greek word *αἰώνιος*, (secular, or, belonging to the ages,) which we translate *everlasting and eternal*, is distinctly proved by the Greek translation of the Old Testament often to mean only *distant time*. Thus in Psalm lxxvi. 5, "I have considered the years of *ancient* times:" Isaiah lxiii. 11, "He remembered the days of *old*, Moses and his people;" in which, and in many similar places, the LXX have *αἰώνιος*. One striking passage is Exodus xv. 18; ("Jehovah shall reign for ever and ever;") where the Greek has τὸν αἰῶνα καὶ ἐπ' αἰῶνα καὶ ἔτι, which would mean "for eternity and still longer," if the strict rendering *eternity*

were enforced. At the same time a suspicion as to the honesty of our translation presented itself in Micah v. 2, a controversial text, often used to prove the past eternity of the Son of God; where the translators give us,—“whose goings forth have been *from everlasting*,” though the Hebrew is the same as they elsewhere render *from days of old*.

After I had at leisure searched through this new question, I found that it was impossible to make out any doctrine of a philosophical eternity in the whole Scriptures. The true Greek word for *eternal* (αἰδιος) occurs twice only: once in Rom. i. 20, as applied to the divine power, and once in Jude 6, of the fire which has been manifested against Sodom and Gomorrha. The last instance showed that allowance must be made for rhetoric; and that fire is called *eternal* or *unquenchable*, when it so destroys as to leave nothing unburnt. But on the whole, the very vocabulary of the Greek and Hebrew denoted that the idea of absolute eternity was unformed. The *hills* are called everlasting (secular?), by those who supposed them to have come into existence two or three thousand years before.—Only in two passages of the Revelations I could not get over the belief that the writer's energy was misplaced, if absolute eternity of torment was not intended: yet it seemed to me unsafe and wrong to found an important doctrine on a symbolic and confessedly obscure book of prophecy. Setting this aside, I found no proof of any *eternal* punishment.

As soon as the load of Scriptural authority was

thus taken off from me, I had a vivid discernment of intolerable moral difficulties inseparable from the doctrine. First, that every sin is infinite in ill-desert and in result, *because* it is committed against an infinite Being. Thus the fretfulness of a child is an infinite evil! I was aghast that I could have believed it. Now that it was no longer laid upon me as a duty to uphold the infinitude of God's retaliation on sin, I saw that it was an immorality to teach that sin was measured by any thing else than the heart and will of the agent. That a finite being should deserve infinite punishment, now was manifestly as incredible as that he should deserve infinite reward,—which I had never dreamed.—Again, I saw that the current orthodoxy made Satan eternal conqueror over Christ. In vain does the Son of God come from heaven and take human flesh and die on the cross. In spite of him, the devil carries off to hell the vast majority of mankind, in whom not misery only, but *Sin* is triumphant for ever and ever. Thus Christ not only does not succeed in destroying the works of the devil, but even aggravates them.—Again: what sort of *gospel* or glad tidings had I been holding? Without this revelation no future state at all (I presumed) could be known. How much better no futurity for any, than that a few should be eternally in bliss, and the great majority kept alive for eternal sin as well as eternal misery? My gospel then was bad tidings, nay, the worst of tidings! In a farther progress of thought, I asked: would it not have been better that the

whole race of man had never come into existence? Clearly! And thus God was made out to be unwise in creating them. No *use* in the punishment was imaginable, without setting up Fear, instead of Love, as the ruling principle in the blessed. And what was the moral tendency of the doctrine? I had never borne to dwell upon it: but I before long suspected that it promoted malignity and selfishness, and was the real clue to the cruelties perpetrated under the name of religion. For he who does dwell on it, must comfort himself under the prospect of his brethren's eternal misery, by the selfish expectation of personal blessedness. When I asked whether I had been guilty of this selfishness, I remembered that I had often mourned, how small a part in my practical religion the future had ever borne. My heaven and my hell had been in the present, where my God was present to smile or to frown. It had seemed to me a great weakness in my faith, that I never had any vivid imaginations or strong desires of heavenly glory: yet now I was glad to observe, that it had at least saved me from getting so much harm from the wrong side of the doctrine of a future life.

Before I had worked out the objections so fully as here stated, I freely disclosed my thoughts to the friend last named, and to his wife, to whom he encouraged me in the frankest confidence. I confess, I said nothing about the Unitarian book; for something told me that I had violated Evangelical decorum in opening it, and that I could not calculate



how it would affect my friend. Certainly no Romish hierarchy can so successfully exclude heretical books, as social enactment excludes those of Unitarians from our orthodox circles. The bookseller dares not to exhibit their books on his counter: all presume them to be pestilential: no one knows their contents or dares to inform himself. But to return. My friend's wife entered warmly into my new views; I have now no doubt that this exceedingly distressed him, and at length perverted his moral judgment: he himself examined the texts of the Old Testament, and attempted no answer to them. After I had left his neighbourhood, I wrote him three affectionate letters, and at last got a reply—of vehement accusation. It can now concern no one to know, how many and deep wounds he planted in me. I forgave; but all was too instructive to forget.

For some years I rested in the belief that the epithet "*secular* punishment" either solely denoted punishment in a future age, or else only of long duration. This evades the horrible idea of eternal and triumphant Sin, and of infinite retaliation for finite offences. But still, I found my new creed uneasy, now that I had established a practice (if not a right) of considering the moral propriety of punishment. I could not so pare away the vehement words of the Scripture, as really to enable me to say that I thought transgressors *deserved* the fiery infliction. This had been easy, while I measured their guilt by God's greatness; but now, how



was I to think that a good-humoured voluptuary deserved to be raised from the dead in order to be tormented in fire for 100 years? and what shorter time could be called secular? Or if he was to be destroyed instantaneously, and "secular" meant only "in a future age," was he worth the effort of a divine miracle to bring him to life and again annihilate him? I was not willing to refuse belief to the Scripture on such grounds; yet I felt disquietude, that my moral sentiment and the Scripture were no longer in full harmony.

---

In this period I first discerned the extreme difficulty that there must essentially be, in applying to the Christian Evidences a principle, which, many years before, I had abstractedly received as sound, though it had been a dead letter with me in practice. The Bible (it seemed) contained two sorts of truth. Concerning one sort, man is bound to judge: the other sort is necessarily beyond his ken, and is received only by information from without. The first part of the statement cannot be denied. It would be monstrous to say, that we know nothing of geography, history, or morals, except by learning them from the Bible. Geography, History, and other worldly sciences, lie beyond question. As to Morals, I had been exceedingly inconsistent and wavering in my theory and in its application; but

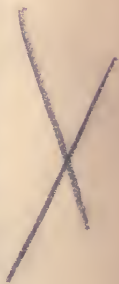
it now glared upon me, that if man had no independent power of judging, it would have been venial to think Barabbas more virtuous than Jesus. The hearers of Christ or Paul could not draw their knowledge of right and wrong from the New Testament. They had (or needed to have) an absolute power of discerning that his conduct was holy and his doctrine good. To talk about the infirmity or depravity of the human conscience, is here quite irrelevant. The conscience of Christ's hearers may have been dim or twisted, but it was their best guide and only guide, as to the question, whether to regard him as a holy prophet: so likewise as to ourselves, it is evident that we have no guide at all whether to accept or reject the Bible, if we distrust that inward power of judging, (whether called common sense, conscience, or the Spirit of God,)—which is independent of our belief in the Bible. To disparage the internally vouchsafed power of discerning truth without the Bible or other authoritative system, is, to endeavour to set up a universal moral scepticism. He who may not criticize, cannot approve.—Well! Let it be admitted that we discern moral truth by a something within us, and that then, admiring the truth so glorious in the Scriptures, we are farther led to receive them as the word of God, and therefore to believe them absolutely in respect to the matters which are beyond our ken.

But two difficulties could no longer be dissembled: 1. how are we to draw the line of sepa-

ration? For instance, would the doctrines of Reprobation and of lasting Fiery Torture with no benefit to the sufferers, belong to the moral part, which we freely criticize; or to the extra-moral part, as to which we passively believe? 2. What is to be done, if in the parts which indisputably lie open to criticism we meet with apparent error?—The second question soon became a practical one with me; but for the reader's convenience I defer it until my Fourth Period, to which it more naturally belongs: for in this Third Period I was principally exercised with controversies that do not vitally touch the *authority* of the Scripture. Of these the most important were matters contested between Unitarians and Calvinists,

---

When I had found how exactly the Nicene Creed summed up all that I myself gathered from John and Paul concerning the divine nature of Christ, I naturally referred to this creed, as expressing my convictions, when any unpleasant inquiry arose. I had recently gained the acquaintance of the late excellent Dr. Olinthus Gregory, a man of unimpeached orthodoxy; who surprized me by the frank avowal, that the Nicene Creed was "a great mistake." He said, that the Arian and the Athanasian difference was not very vital; and that the Scriptural truth lay *beyond* the Nicene doctrine,



which fell short on the same side as Arianism had done. On the contrary, I had learned of an intermediate tenet, called Semi-Arianism, which appeared to me more scriptural than the views of either Athanasius or Arius. Let me bespeak my reader's patience for a little. Arius was judged by Athanasius (I was informed) to be erroneous in two points; 1. in teaching that the Son of God was a creature; *i. e.* that "begotten" and "made" were two words for the same idea: 2. in teaching, that he had an origin of existence in time; so that there was a distant period at which he was not. Of these two Arian tenets, the Nicene Creed condemned *the former* only; namely, in the words: "begotten, not made; being of one substance with the Father." But on *the latter* question the Creed is silent. Those who accepted the Creed, and hereby condemned the great error of Arius that the Son was of different substance from the Father, but nevertheless agreed with Arius in thinking that the Son had a beginning of existence, were called Semi-Arians; and were received into communion by Athanasius, in spite of this disagreement.—To me it seemed to be a most unworthy shuffling with words, to say that the Son *was begotten, but was never begotten*. The very form of our past participle, is invented to indicate an event in past time. If the Athanasians alledged that the phrase does not allude to "a coming forth" completed at a definite time, but indicates a process at no time begun and at no time complete, their doctrine could not be expressed by



our past-perfect tense *begotten*. When they compared the derivation of the Son of God from the Father to the rays of light which ever flow from the natural sun, and argued that if that sun had been eternal, its emanations would be coeternal, they showed that their true doctrine required the formula: "always being begotten, and as instantly perishing, in order to be rebegotten perpetually." They showed a real disbelief in our English statement "begotten, not made." I overruled the objection, that in the Greek, it was not a participle, but a verbal adjective: for it was manifest to me, that a doctrine which could not be proclaimed in English, could not be true; and the very idea of a Creed announcing that Christ was "*not begotten, yet begettive*" roused in me an unspeakable loathing. Yet surely this would have been Athanasius's most legitimate form of denying Semi-Arianism. In short, the Scriptural phrase, *Son of God*, conveyed to us either a literal fact, or a metaphor. If literal, the Semi-Arians were clearly right, in saying that sonship implied a beginning of existence. If it was a metaphor, the Athanasians forfeited all right to press the literal sense in proof that the Son must be "of the same substance" as the Father.—Seeing that the Athanasians, in zeal to magnify the Son, had so confounded their good sense, I was certainly startled to find a man of Dr. Olinthus Gregory's moral wisdom treat the Nicenists as in obvious error for not having magnified Christ *enough*. On so many other sides, however, I met



with the new and short creed, "Jesus is Jehovah," that I began to discern Sabellianism to be the prevalent view.

A little later, I fell in with a book of an American Professor, Moses Stuart of Andover, on the subject of the Trinity. Professor Stuart is a very learned man, and thinks for himself. He amazed me, however, by not only denying the orthodoxy of all the Fathers, (which was little more than Dr. Olinthus Gregory had done,) but by avowing that *from the change in speculative philosophy* it was simply impossible for any modern to hold the views prevalent in the third and fourth centuries. Nothing was clearer, than that with us the essential point in Deity is, to be unoriginated, underived; hence with us, *a derived God* is a self-contradiction, and the very sound of the phrase profane. On the other hand it is certain that the doctrine of Athanasius, equally as of Arius, was, that the Father is the underived or self-existent God, but the Son is the derived subordinate God. This (argued Stuart) turned upon their belief in the doctrine of Emanations; but as *we* hold no such philosophical doctrine, the religious theory founded on it is necessarily inadmissible. Professor Stuart then develops his own creed, which appeared to me simple and undeniable Sabellianism.

That Stuart correctly represented the Fathers, was clear enough to me; but I nevertheless thought that in this respect the Fathers had honestly made out the doctrine of the Scripture; and I did not at

all approve of setting up a battery of modern speculative philosophy against Scriptural doctrine. "How are we to know that the doctrine of Emanations is false? (asked I.) If it is legitimately elicited from Scripture, it is true."—I refused to yield up my creed at this summons. Nevertheless, he left a wound upon me: for I now could not help seeing, that we moderns use the word *God* in a more limited sense than any ancient nations did. Hebrews and Greeks alike, said *Gods* to mean any superhuman beings; hence *derived God* did not sound to them absurd: but I could not deny that in good English it is absurd. This was a very disagreeable discovery: for now, if any one were to ask me whether I believed in the divinity of Christ, I saw it would be dishonest to say simply *Yes*; for the interrogator means to ask, whether I hold Christ to be the eternal and underived Source of life: yet if I said *No*, he would care nothing for my professing to hold the Nicene Creed.

Might not then, after all, Sabellianism be the truth? No: I discerned too plainly what Gibbon states, that the Sabellian, if consistent, is only a concealed Ebionite, or as we now say, a Unitarian, Socinian. As we cannot admit that the Father was slain on the cross, or prayed to himself in the garden, he who will not allow the Father and the Son to be separate persons, but only two names for one person, *must divide the Son of God and Jesus into two persons*, and so fall back on the very heresy of Socinus which he is struggling to escape.

On the whole I saw, that however people might call themselves Trinitarians, yet if, like Stuart and all the Evangelicals, in Church and Dissent, they turn into a dead letter the *generation* of the Son of God and *the procession* of the Spirit, nothing is possible but Sabellianism or Tritheism:—or indeed Ditheism, if the Spirit's separate personality is not held. The modern creed is alternately the one or the other, as occasion requires. Sabellians would find themselves out to be mere Unitarians, if they always remained Sabellians: but in fact, they are half their lives Ditheists. They do not *aim* at consistency: would an upholder of the pseudo-Athanasian creed desire it? Nay, that creed teaches, that the height of orthodoxy is to contradict oneself and protest that one does not. Now however rose on me the question: Why do I not take the Irish clergyman at his word, and attack him and others as idolaters and worshippers of three Gods? It was unseemly and absurd in him, to try to force me into what he must have judged uncharitableness; but it is not the less incumbent on me to find a reply.

I remembered that in past years I had expressly disowned, as obviously unscriptural and absurd, prayers to the Holy Spirit; on the ground that the Spirit is evidently *God in the hearts of the faithful*, and nothing else: and it did not appear to me that any but a few extreme and rather fanatical persons could be charged with making the Spirit a third God or object of distinct worship. On the

other hand, I could not deny that the Son and the Father were thus distinguished to the mind. So indeed John expressly avowed: "truly our fellowship is with the Father, and with his Son Jesus Christ." I myself also had prayed sometimes to God and sometimes to Christ, alternately and confusedly. Now indeed I was better taught! now I was more logical and consistent! I had found a triumphant answer to the charge of Ditheism, in that I believed the Son to be derived from the Father, and not to be the Unoriginated. — No doubt! yet after all, could I seriously think, that morally and spiritually I was either better or worse for this discovery? I could not pretend that I was.

This showed me, that if a man of partially unsound and visionary mind made the angel Gabriel a *fourth person* in the Godhead, it might cause no difference whatever in the actings of his spirit. The great question would be, whether he ascribed the same moral perfection to Gabriel as to the Father. If so, to worship him would be no degradation to the soul; even if absolute omnipotence were not attributed, nay, nor a past eternal existence. It thus became clear to me, that Polytheism *as such* is not a moral and spiritual, but at most only an intellectual, error: and that its practical evil consists in worshipping beings whom we represent to our imaginations as morally imperfect. Conversely, one who imputes to God sentiments and conduct which in man he would call capricious or



cruel, such a one, even if he be as monotheistic as a Mussulman, admits into his soul the whole virus of Idolatry.

Why then did I at all cling to the doctrine of Christ's superior nature, and not admit it among things indifferent? In obedience to the Scripture, I did actually affirm, that, as far as creed is concerned, a man should be admissible into the Church on the bare confession that *Jesus was the Christ*. Still, I regarded a belief in his superhuman origin as of first-rate importance, for many reasons, and among others, owing to its connexion with the doctrine of the Atonement; on which there is much to be said.

---

The doctrine which I used to read as a boy, taught that a vast sum of punishment was due to God for the sins of men. This vast sum was made up of all the woes due through eternity to the whole human race, or as some said, to the elect. Christ on the cross bore this punishment himself, and thereby took it away: thus God is enabled to forgive, without violating justice.—But I early encountered unanswerable difficulty on this theory, as to the question, whether Christ had borne the punishment of *all* or of *some* only. If of all, is it not unjust to inflict any of it on any? If of the elect only, what gospel have you to preach? for then you cannot tell sinners that God has provided a Saviour for them; for you do not know whether



those whom you address are elect. Finding no way out of this, I abandoned the fundamental idea of *compensation in quantity*, as untenable; and rested in the vaguer notion, that God signally showed his abhorrence of sin, by laying tremendous misery on the Saviour who was to bear away sin.

I have already narrated, how at Oxford I was embarrassed as to the forensic propriety of transferring punishment at all. This however I received as matter of authority, and rested much on the wonderful exhibition made of the evil of sin, when *such* a being could be subjected to preternatural suffering as a vicarious sinbearer. To this view, a high sense of the personal dignity of Jesus was quite essential; and therefore I had always felt a great repugnance for Mr. Belsham, Dr. Priestley, and the Unitarians of that school, though I had not read a line of their writings.

A more intimate familiarity with St. Paul and an anxious harmonizing of my very words to the Scripture, led me on into a deviation from the popular creed, of the full importance of which I was not for some time aware. I perceived that it is not the *agonies* of mind or body endured by Christ, which in the Scriptures are said to take away sin, but his "death," his "laying down his life," or sometimes even his *resurrection*. I gradually became convinced, that when his "suffering," or more especially his "blood," is emphatically spoken of, nothing is meant but his *violent death*. In the Epistle to the Hebrews, where the analogy of Sacri-

fice is so pressed, we see that the pains which Jesus bore, were in order that he might "learn obedience;" but our redemption is effected by his dying as a voluntary victim: in which, death by bloodshed, not pain, is the cardinal point. So too the Paschal lamb, (to which, though not properly a sacrifice, the dying Christ is compared by Paul,) was not roasted alive, or otherwise put to slow torment, but was simply killed. I therefore saw that the doctrine of "vicarious agonies" was fundamentally unscriptural.

This being fully discerned, I became bold to criticize the popular tenet. What should we think of a judge, who, when a boy had deserved a stripe which would to him have been a sharp punishment, laid the very same blow on a strong man, to whom it was a slight infliction? Clearly this would evade, not satisfy justice. To carry out the principle, the blow might be laid as well on a giant, an elephant, or on an inanimate thing. So to lay our punishment on the infinite strength of Christ, who (they say) bore in six hours, what it would have taken thousands of millions of men all eternity to bear, would be a similar evasion.—I farther asked, if we were to fall in with Pagans, who tortured their victims to death as an atonement, what idea of God should we think them to form? and what should we reply, if they said, it gave them a wholesome view of his hatred of sin? A second time I became amazed at the notions which I had once imbibed as a part of religion; and then got comfort from the

inference, how much better men of this century are than their creed. Their creed was the product of ages of cruelty and credulity; and it sufficiently bears that stamp.

Thus I rested in the Scriptural doctrine, that the *death* of Christ is our atonement. To say the same of the death of Paul, was obviously unscriptural: it was then essential to believe the physical nature of Christ to be different from that of Paul. If otherwise, death was due to Jesus as the lot of nature: how could such death have any thing to do with our salvation? On this ground the Unitarian doctrine was utterly untenable: I could see nothing between my own view and a total renunciation of the *authority of the doctrines* promulgated by Paul and John.

Nevertheless, my own view seemed more and more unmeaning, the more closely it was interrogated. When I ascribed death to Christ, what did death mean? and what or whom did I suppose to die? Was it man that died, or God? If man only, how was that wonderful, or how did it concern us? Besides;—persons die, not natures: a *nature* is only a collection of properties: if Christ was one person, all Christ died. Did then God die, and man remain alive! For God to become non-existent, is an unimaginable absurdity. But is this death a mere change of state, a renunciation of earthly life? Still it remains unclear how the parting with mere human life could be to one who possesses a divine life either an atonement or a hu-

miliation. Was it not rather an escape from humiliation, saving only the mode of death? So severe was this difficulty, that at length I unawares dropt from Semi-Arianism into pure Arianism, by *so* distinguishing the Son from the Father, as to admit the idea that the Son of God had actually been non-existent in the interval between death and resurrection: nevertheless, I more and more felt, that *to be able to define my own notions on such questions had exceedingly little to do with my spiritual state*. For me it was important and essential to know that God hated sin, and that God had forgiven my sin: but to know one particular manifestation of his hatred of sin, or the machinery by which He had enabled himself to forgive, was of very secondary importance. When He proclaims to me in his word, that He is forgiving to all the penitent, it is not for me to reply, that "I cannot believe that, until I hear how He manages to reconcile such conduct with his other attributes." I remembered with surprise, that this was Bishop Beveridge's sufficient refutation of Mohammedism, which teaches no Atonement.

---

At the same time great progress had been made in my mind towards the overthrow of the correlative dogma of the Fall of man and his total corruption. Probably for years I had been unawares anti-Calvinistic on this topic. Even at Oxford,



I had held, that human depravity is a *fact*, which it is absurd to argue against; a fact, attested by Thucydides, Polybius, Horace and Tacitus, almost as strongly as by St. Paul. Yet in admitting man's total corruption, I interpreted this of *spiritual*, not of *moral*, perversion: for that there were kindly and amiable qualities even in the unregenerate, was quite as clear a fact as any other. Hence in result I did *not* attribute to man any great essential depravity, in the popular and moral sense of the word; and the doctrine amounted only to this, that "*spiritually*, man is paralyzed, until the grace of God comes freely upon him." How to reconcile this with the condemnation and punishment of man for being unspiritual, I knew not. I saw, and did not dissemble, the difficulty; but received it as a mystery hereafter to be cleared up.

But it gradually broke upon me, that when Paul said nothing stronger than heathen moralists had said about human wickedness, it was absurd to quote his words, any more than theirs, in proof of a *Fall*,—that is, of a permanent degeneracy induced by the first sin of the first man: and when I studied the 5th chapter of the Romans, I found it was *death*, not *corruption*, which Adam was said to have entailed. In short, I could not find the modern doctrine of the "Fall" any where in the Bible. I then remembered, that Calvin in his Institutes complains that all the Fathers are heterodox on this point: the Greek Fathers being grievously overweening in their estimate of human



power; while of the Latin Fathers even Augustine is not always up to Calvin's mark of orthodoxy. This confirmed my rising conviction that the tenet is of rather recent origin. I afterward heard, that both it and the doctrine of compensatory misery were first systematized by Archbishop Anselm, in the reign of our William Rufus: but I never took the pains to verify this.

For meanwhile I had been forcibly impressed with the following thought. Suppose a youth to have been carefully brought up at home, and every temptation kept out of his way: suppose him to have been in appearance virtuous, amiable, religious: suppose farther that at the age of twenty-one he goes out into the world, and falls into sin by the first temptation:—how will a Calvinistic teacher moralize over such a youth? Will he not say: “Behold a proof of the essential depravity of human nature! See the affinity of man for sin! How fair and deceptive was this young man's virtue, while he was sheltered from temptation; but oh! how rotten has it proved itself!”—Undoubtedly, the Calvinist would and must so moralize. But it struck me, that if I substituted the name of *Adam* for the youth, the argument proved the primitive corruption of Adam's nature. Adam fell by the first temptation: what greater proof of a fallen nature have *I* ever given? or what is it possible for any one to give?—I was surprized to discern that there was *à priori* impossibility of fixing on myself the imputation of *degeneracy*, without fixing the

same on Adam. In short, Adam undeniably proved his primitive nature to be frail ; so do we all : but as *he* was nevertheless not primitively corrupt, why should we call ourselves so ? Frailty then is not corruption, and does not prove degeneracy.

“Original sin” (says one of the 39 Articles) “standeth not in the following of Adam, *as the Pelagians do vainly talk,*” &c. Alas, then ! was I become a Pelagian ? certainly I could no longer see that Adam’s first sin affected me more than his second or third, or so much as the sins of my immediate parents. A father who, for instance, indulges in furious passions and exciting liquors, may (I suppose) transmit violent passions to his son. In this sense I could not wholly reject the possibility of transmitted corruption ; but it had nothing to do with the theological doctrine of the “Federal Headship” of Adam. Not that I could wholly give up this last doctrine ; for I still read it in the 5th chapter of Romans. But it was clear to me, that whatever that meant, I could not combine it with the idea of degeneracy, nor could I find a proof of it in the *fact* of prevalent wickedness. Thus I received a shadowy doctrine on mere Scriptural *authority* ; it had no longer any root in my understanding or heart.

Moreover it was manifest to me that the Calvinistic view is based in a vain attempt to acquit God of having created a “sinful” being, while the broad Scriptural fact is, that he did create a being as truly “liable to sin” as any of us. If that needs

no exculpation, how more does *our* state need it? Does it not suffice to say, that "every creature, because he is a creature and not God, must necessarily be frail?" But Calvin intensely aggravates whatever there is of difficulty: for he supposes God to have created the most precious thing on earth in *unstable equilibrium*, so as to tipple over irrecoverably at the first infinitesimal touch, and with it wreck for ever the spiritual hopes of all Adam's posterity. Surely all nature proclaims, that if God planted any spiritual nature at all in man, it was in *stable equilibrium*, able to right itself when deranged.

Lastly I saw, that the Calvinistic doctrine of human degeneracy teaches, that God disowns my nature (the only nature I ever had) as not his work, but the devil's work. He hereby tells me that he is *not* my Creator, and he disclaims his rights over me, as a father who disowns a child. To teach this, is to teach that I owe him no obedience, no worship, no trust; to sever the cords that bind the creature to the Creator, and to make all religion gratuitous and vain.

Thus Calvinism was found by me not only not to be Evangelical, but not to be logical, in spite of its high logical pretensions; and to be irreconcilable with any intelligent theory of religion. Of "gloomy Calvinism" I had often heard people speak with an emphasis that annoyed me, as highly unjust; for mine had not been a gloomy religion:—far, very far from it. On the side of eternal punishment its

theory, no doubt, had been gloomy enough ; but human nature has a singular art of not realizing all the articles of a creed ; moreover *this* doctrine is equally held by Arminians. But I was conscious that in dropping Calvinism, I had lost nothing *Evangelical* : on the contrary, the gospel which I retained was as spiritual and deephearted as before, only more merciful.

---

Before this Third Period of my creed was completed, I made my first acquaintance with a Unitarian. This gentleman showed much sweetness of mind, largeness of charity, and a timid devoutness which surprized me in such a quarter. His mixture of credulity and incredulity seemed to me capricious, and wholly incoherent. First, as to his incredulity, or rather, boldness of thought. Eternal punishment was a notion, which nothing could make him believe, and for which it would be useless to quote Scripture to him ; for the doctrine (he said) darkened the moral character of God, and produced malignity in man. That Christ had any higher physical nature than we all have, was a tenet essentially inadmissible ; first, because it destroyed all moral benefit from his example and sympathy, and next, because no one has yet succeeded in even stating the doctrine of the Incarnation without contradicting himself. If Christ was but one person, one mind, then that one mind could not be simul-



taneously finite and infinite, nor therefore simultaneously God and man. But when I came to hear more from this same gentleman, I was amazed to find him avow that no Trinitarian could have a higher conception than he of the present power and glory of Christ. He believed that the man Jesus is at the head of the whole moral creation of God : that all power in heaven and earth is given to him : that he will be Judge of all men, and is himself raised above all judgment. This was to me unimaginable from his point of view. Could he really think Jesus to be a mere man, and yet believe him to be sinless ? On what did that belief rest ? Two texts were quoted in proof, 1 Pet. ii. 21, and Heb. iv. 15. Of these, the former did not necessarily mean any thing more than that Jesus was unjustly put to death ; and the latter belonged to an Epistle, which my new friend had already rejected as unapostolic and not of first rate authority, when speaking of the Atonement. Indeed, that the Epistle to the Hebrews is not from the hand of Paul, had very long seemed to me an obvious certainty,—as long as I had had any delicate feeling of Greek style.

That a human child, born with the nature of other children, and having to learn wisdom and win virtue through the same process, should grow up sinless, appeared to me an event so paradoxical, as to need the most amply decisive proof. Yet what kind of proof was possible ? Neither Apollos, (if he was the author of the Epistle to the Hebrews,) nor yet



Peter, had any power of *attesting* the sinlessness of Jesus, as a fact known to themselves personally : they could only learn it by some preternatural communication, to which nevertheless the passages before us implied no pretension whatever. To me it appeared an axiom, that if Jesus was in physical origin a mere man, he was, like myself, a sinful man, and therefore certainly not my Judge, certainly not an omniscient reader of all hearts ; nor on any account to be bowed down to as Lord. To exercise hope, faith, trust in him, seemed then an impiety. I did not mean to impute impiety to Unitarians ; still I distinctly believed that English Unitarianism could never afford me a half-hour's resting place.

Nevertheless, from contact with this excellent person I learned how much tenderness of spirit a Unitarian may have ; and it pleasantly enlarged my charity, although I continued to feel much repugnance for his doctrine, and was anxious and constrained in the presence of Unitarians. From the same collision with him, I gained a fresh insight into a part of my own mind. I had always regarded the Gospels (at least the three first) to be to the Epistles, nearly as Law to Gospel ; that is, the three gospels dealt chiefly in *precept*, the epistles in *motives* which act on the affections. This did not appear to me dishonourable to the teaching of Christ ; for I supposed it to be a pre-determined development, and that he could not with advantage have preached himself, as Paul and John preached him. But I now discovered, that there was a

deeper distaste in me for the details of the human life of Christ, than I was previously conscious ; a distaste which I found out, by a reaction from the minute interest felt in such details by my new friend. For several years more, I did not fully understand how and why this was ; viz. that *my religion had always been Pauline*. Christ was to me the ideal of glorified human nature : but I needed some dimness in the portrait to give play to my imagination : if drawn too sharply historical, it sank into common place and caused a revulsion of feeling. As all paintings of the miraculous used to displease and even disgust me from a boy by the unbelief which they inspired ; so if any one dwelt on the special proofs of tenderness and love exhibited in certain words or actions of Jesus, it was apt to call out in me a sense, that from day to day equal kindness might often be met. The imbecility of preachers, who would dwell on such words as “Weep not,” as if nobody else ever uttered such,—had always annoyed me. I felt it impossible to obtain a worthy idea of Christ from studying any of the details reported concerning him. If I dwelt too much on these, I got a finite object ; but I yearned for an infinite one : hence my preference for John’s mysterious Jesus. Thus my Christ was not the figure accurately painted in the narrative, but one kindled in my imagination by the allusions and (as it were) poetry of the New Testament. I did not wish for vivid historical realization : relics I could never have valued : pilgrimages to Jerusa-

lem had always excited in me more of scorn than of sympathy;—and I make no doubt such was fundamentally Paul's\* feeling. On the contrary, it began to appear to me (and I believe, not unjustly) that the Unitarian mind revelled peculiarly in "Christ after the flesh," whom Paul resolved not to know. Possibly in this circumstance will be found to lie the strong and the weak points of the Unitarian religious character, as contrasted with that of the Evangelical, far more truly than in the doctrine of the Atonement. I can testify that the Atonement may be dropt out of Pauline religion without affecting its quality; so may Christ be spiritualized into God, and identified with the Father: but I suspect that a Pauline faith could not without much violence and convulsion be changed—(I should call it, depressed and enfeebled)—into devout admiration of a clearly drawn historical character; as though any full and unsurpassable embodiment of God's moral perfections could be exhibited with ink and pen.

\* The same may probably be said of all the apostles, and their whole generation. If they had looked on the life of Jesus with the same tender and human affection as modern Unitarians and pious Romanists do, the Church would have swarmed with *holy coats* and other relics in the very first age. The mother of Jesus and her little establishment would at once have swelled into importance. This certainly was not the case; which may make it doubtful whether the other apostles dwelt at all more on the *human personality* of Jesus than Paul did. Strikingly different as James is from Paul, he is in this respect perfectly agreed with him.

Such had been the progress of my mind, towards the end of what I will call my Third Period. In it the authority of the Scriptures as to some details (which at length became highly important) had begun to be questioned ; of which I shall proceed to speak : but hitherto this was quite secondary to the momentous revolution which lay Calvinism prostrate in my mind, which opened my heart to Unitarians, and, I may say, to unbelievers ; which enlarged all my sympathies, and set me to practise free moral thought, at least as a necessity, if not as duty. Yet I held fast an unabated reverence for the moral and spiritual teaching of the New Testament, and had not the most remote conception that any thing could ever shatter my belief in its great miracles. In fact, during this period, I many times again yearned to proceed to India, whither my friend Groves had transferred his labours and his hopes ; but I was thwarted by several causes, and was again and again damped by the fear of bigotry from new quarters. Otherwise, I thought I could succeed in merging as needless many controversies. In all the workings of my mind about Tri-unity, Incarnation, Atonement, the Fall, Resurrection, Immortality, Eternal Punishment, how little had any of these to do with the inward exercises of my soul towards God ! He was still the same, immutably glorious : not one feature of his countenance had altered to my gaze or could alter. This surely was the God whom Christ came to reveal, and



bring us into fellowship with: this is that, about which Christians ought to have no controversy, but which they should unitedly, concordantly themselves enjoy and exhibit to the heathen. But oh, Christendom! what dost thou believe and teach? The heathen cry out to thee, — Physician, heal thyself.



## FOURTH PERIOD.

## THE RELIGION OF THE LETTER RENOUNCED.

IT has been stated that I had already begun to discern that it was impossible with perfect honesty to defend every tittle contained in the Bible. Most of the points which give moral offence in the book of Genesis I had been used to explain away by the doctrine of Progress; yet every now and then it became hard to deny that God is represented as giving an actual *sanction* to that which we now call sinful. Indeed, up and down the Scriptures, very numerous texts are scattered, which are notorious difficulties with commentators. These I had habitually *overruled* one by one: but again of late, since I had been forced to act and talk less and think more, they began to encompass me; and I felt an increasing disinclination ever again to assert the infallible truth of the book of Genesis. But I was for a while too full of other inquiries to follow up coherently any of my doubts or perceptions, until my mind became at length nailed down to the definite study of one well-known passage.

This passage may be judged of extremely secondary importance in itself, yet by its remoteness from all properly spiritual and profound questions,

it seemed to afford to me the safest of arguments. The *genealogy* with which the gospel of Matthew opens, I had long known to be a stumbling-block to divines, and I had never been satisfied with their explanations. On reading it afresh after long intermission, and comparing it for myself with the Old Testament, I was struck with observing that the corruption of the two names Ahaziah and Uzziah into the same sound (Oziah) has been the cause of merging four generations into one ; as the similarity of Jehoiakim to Jehoiachin also led to blending them both in the name Jeconiah. In consequence there ought to be 18 generations where Matthew has given us only 14 : yet we cannot call this an error of a transcriber ; for it is distinctly remarked that the genealogy consists of 14 three times repeated. Thus there were but 14 names inserted by Matthew : yet it ought to have been 18 : and he was under manifest mistake. This surely belongs to a class of knowledge, of which man has cognizance : it would not be piety, but grovelling superstition, to avow before God that I distrust my powers of counting, and, in obedience to the written word, I believe that 18 is 14 and 14 is 18. Thus it is impossible to deny, that there is cognizable error in the first chapter of Matthew. Consequently, that gospel is not all by the Spirit of God, and (unless we can get rid of the first chapter as no part of the Bible) the doctrine of the verbal infallibility of the whole Bible, or indeed of the New Testament, is demonstrably false.

After I had turned the matter over often, and had become accustomed to the thought, this single instance at length had great force to give boldness to my mind within a very narrow range. I asked whether, if the chapter were now proved to be spurious, that would save the infallibility of the Bible. The reply was: not of the Bible as it is; but only of the Bible when cleared of that *and of all other* spurious additions. If by independent methods, such as an examination of manuscripts, the spuriousness of the chapter could now be shown, *this would verify the faculty of criticism* which has already objected to its contents: thus it would justly encourage us to apply similar criticism to other passages.

I farther remembered, and now brought together under a single point of view, other undeniable mistakes. The genealogy of the nominal father of Jesus in Luke is inconsistent with that in Matthew, in spite of the flagrant dishonesty with which divines seek to deny this; and neither evangelist gives the genealogy of Mary, which alone is wanted. —In Acts vii. 16, the sepulchre which *Jacob* bought of Hamor, father of Shechem, is confounded with that which *Abraham* bought of Ephron the Hittite. In Acts v. 36, 37, Gamaliel is made to say that Theudas was earlier in time than Judas of Galilee. Yet in fact, Judas of Galilee preceded Theudas; and the revolt of Theudas had not yet taken place when Gamaliel spoke, so the error is not Gamaliel's, but Luke's. Of both the insurgents we

have a clear and unimpeached historical account in Josephus.—The slaughter of the infants by Herod, if true, must, I thought, needs have been recorded by the same historian.—So again, in regard to the allusion made by Jesus to Zacharias, son of Barachias, as *last of the martyrs*, it was difficult for me to shake off the suspicion, that a gross error had been committed, and that the person intended is the “Zacharias son of Baruchus,” who, as we know from Josephus, was martyred *within the courts of the temple* during the siege of Jerusalem by Titus, about 40 years after the crucifixion. The well known prophet Zechariah was indeed son of Berechiah ; but he was not last of the martyrs\*, if indeed he was martyred at all. On the whole, the persuasion stuck to me, that words had been put into the mouth of Jesus, which he could not possibly have used.—The impossibility of settling the names of the 12 apostles, struck me as a notable fact.—I farther remembered the numerous difficulties of harmonizing the four gospels ; how, when a boy at school, I had tried to incorporate all four into one history, and the dismay with which I had found the insoluble character of the problem,—the endless discrepancies and perpetual uncertainties. These now began to seem to me inherent in the materials,

\* Some say, that Zechariah, son of Jehoiada, named in the Chronicles, is meant ; that he is *confounded* with the prophet, the son of Berechiah, and was *supposed* to be the last of the martyrs, because the Chronicles are placed last in the Hebrew Bible. This is a plausible view ; but it saves the Scripture only by imputing error to Jesus.



and not to be ascribable to our want of intelligence.

I had also discerned in the opening of Genesis things which could not be literally received. The geography of the rivers in Paradise is inexplicable, though it assumes the tone of explanation. The curse on the serpent, who is to go on his belly—(how else did he go before?)—and eat dust, is a capricious punishment on a race of brutes, one of whom the Devil chose to use as his instrument. That the painfulness of childbirth is caused, not by Eve's sin, but by artificial habits and a weakened nervous system, seems to be proved by the twofold fact, that savage women and wild animals suffer but little, and tame cattle often suffer as much as human females.—About this time also, I had perceived (what I afterwards learned the Germans to have more fully investigated) that the two different accounts of the Creation are distinguished by the appellations given to the divine Creator. I did not see how to resist the inference that the book is made up of heterogeneous documents, and was not put forth by the dictation of the Spirit to Moses.

A new stimulus was after this given to my mind by two short conversations with the late excellent Dr. Arnold at Rugby. I had become aware of the difficulties encountered by physiologists in believing the whole human race to have proceeded in about 6000 years from a single Adam and Eve; and that the longevity (not miraculous, but ordinary) attributed to the patriarchs was another stumbling-block.

The geological difficulties of the Mosaic cosmogony were also at that time exciting much attention. To my surprize, Dr. Arnold treated all these questions as matters of indifference to religion; and did not hesitate to say, that the account of Noah's deluge was evidently mythical, and the history of Joseph "a beautiful poem." I was staggered at this. If all were not descended from Adam, what became of St. Paul's parallel between the first and second Adam, and the doctrine of Headship and Atonement founded on it? If the world was not made in six days, how could we defend the Fourth Commandment as true, though said to have been written in stone by the very finger of God? If Noah's deluge was a legend, we should at least have to admit that Peter did not know this: what too would be said of Christ's allusion to it? I was unable to admit Dr. Arnold's views; but to see a vigorous mind, deeply imbued with Christian devoutness, so convinced, both reassured me that I need not fear moral mischiefs from free inquiry, and indeed laid that inquiry upon me as a duty.

Here however was a new point started. Does the question of the derivation of the human race from two parents, belong to things cognizable by the human intellect, or to things about which we must learn submissively? Plainly to the former. It would be monstrous to deny that such inquiries legitimately belong to physiology, or to proscribe a free study of this science. If so, there was an

*à priori* possibility, that what is in the strictest sense called "religious doctrine" might come into direct collision not merely with my ill-trained conscience, but with legitimate science; and that this would call on me to ask: "Which of the two certainties is stronger? that the religious parts of the Scripture are infallible, or that the science is trustworthy?" and I then first saw, that while science had (within however limited a range of thought) demonstration or severe verifications, it was impossible to pretend to any thing so cogent in favour of the infallibility of any or some part of the Scriptures; a doctrine which I was accustomed to believe, and felt to be a legitimate presumption; yet one of which it grew harder and harder to assign any proof, the more closely I analyzed it. Nevertheless, I still held it fast, and resolved not to let it go until I was forced.

A fresh strain fell on the Scriptural infallibility, in contemplating the origin of Death. Geologists assured us, that death went on in the animal creation many ages before the existence of man. The rocks formed of the shells of animals, testify that death is a phenomenon thousands of thousand years old: to refer the death of animals to the sin of Adam and Eve is evidently impossible. Yet if not, the analogies of the human to the brute form make it scarcely credible that man's body can ever have been intended for immortality. Nay, when we consider the conditions of birth and growth to which it

is subject, the wear and tear essential to life, the new generations intended to succeed and supplant the old,—so soon as the question is proposed as one of physiology, the reply is inevitable that death is no accident introduced by the perverse will of our first parents, nor any way connected with man's sinfulness: seeing that animals who are not sinful are liable to death, which is nothing but a necessary result of the conditions of animal life. On the contrary, St. Paul rests most important conclusions on the fact, that one man Adam by personal sin brought death upon all his posterity. If this was a fundamental error, religious doctrine also is shaken.

In various attempts at compromise,—such as conceding the Scriptural fallibility in human science, but maintaining its spiritual perfection,—I always found the division impracticable. At last it pressed on me, that if I admitted Morals to rest on an independent basis, it was dishonest to shut my eyes to any apparent collisions of morality with the Scriptures. A very notorious and decisive instance is that of Jael.—Sisera, when beaten in battle, fled to the tent of his friend Heber, and was there warmly welcomed by Jael, Heber's wife. After she had refreshed him with food, and lulled him to sleep, she killed him by driving a nail into his temples; and for this deed, (which now-a-days would be called a perfidious murder,) the prophetess Deborah, in an inspired psalm, pronounces Jael to be



“blessed above women,” and glorifies her act by an elaborate description of its atrocity. As soon as I felt that I was bound to pass a moral judgment on this, I saw that as regards the Old Testament the battle was already lost. Many other things indeed instantly rose in full power upon me; especially, the command to Abraham to slay his son. Paul and James agree in extolling his obedience as a first-rate fruit of faith: yet if the voice of morality is allowed to be heard, Abraham was (in heart and intention, though not in actual performance) not less guilty than those who sacrificed their children to Moloch.

Thus at length it appeared, that I must choose between two courses. I must EITHER blind my moral sentiment, my powers of criticism, and my scientific knowledge, (such as they were,) in order to accept the Scripture entire: OR I must encounter the problem, however arduous, of adjusting the relative claims of human knowledge and divine revelation. As to the former method, to name it was to condemn it; for it would put every system of Paganism on a par with Christianity. If one system of religion may claim that we blind our hearts and eyes in its favour, so may another; and there is precisely the same reason for becoming a Hindoo in religion, as a Christian. We cannot be both; therefore the principle is *demonstrably* absurd. It is also of course morally horrible, and opposed to countless passages of the Scriptures themselves.

Nor can the argument be evaded by talking of external evidences; for these also are confessedly moral evidences, to be judged of by our moral faculties. Nay, according to all Christian advocates, they are God's test of our moral temper. To alledge therefore that our moral faculties are not to judge, is to annihilate the evidences for Christianity. —Thus finally I was lodged in three inevitable conclusions:

1. The moral and intellectual powers of man must be acknowledged as having a right and duty to criticize the contents of the Scripture:

2. When so exerted, they condemn portions of the Scripture as erroneous and immoral:

3. The assumed infallibility of the entire Scripture is a proved falsity, not merely as to physiology, and other scientific matters, but also as to morals: and it remains for farther inquiry, how to discriminate the trustworthy from the untrustworthy within the limits of the Bible itself.

---

When distinctly conscious, after long efforts to evade it, that this was and must henceforth be my position, I ruminated on the many auguries which had been made concerning me by frightened friends. "You will become a Socinian," had been said of me even at Oxford: "You will become an infidel,"

had since been added. My present results, I was aware, would seem a sadly triumphant confirmation to the clearsighted instinct of orthodoxy. But the animus of such prophecies had always made me indignant, and I could not admit that there was any merit in such clearsightedness. What? (used I to say:) will you shrink from truth, lest it lead to error? if following truth must bring us to Socinianism, let us by all means become Socinians, or any thing else. Surely we do not love our doctrines more than the truth, but because they are the truth; "for the truth's sake, which dwelleth in them." Are we not exhorted to "prove all things, and hold fast that which is good?"—But to my surprize, I generally found that this (to me so convincing) argument for feeling no alarm, only caused more and more alarm, and gloomier omens concerning me. On considering all this in leisurely retrospect, I began painfully to doubt, whether after all there is much love of truth even among those who have an undeniable strength of religious feeling. I questioned with myself, whether love of truth is not a virtue demanding a robust mental cultivation; whether mathematical or other abstract studies may not be practically needed for it. But no: for how then could it exist in some feminine natures? how in rude and unphilosophical times? On the whole, I rather concluded, that there is in nearly all English education a positive repressing of a young person's truthfulness; for I could distinctly see, that in my own case there was always need of defying

authority and public opinion,—not to speak of more serious sacrifices,—if I was to follow truth. All society seemed so to hate novelties of thought, as to prefer the chances of error in the old.—Of course! why, how could it be otherwise, while Test Articles were maintained?

Yet surely if God is truth, none sincerely aspire to him, who dread to lose their present opinions in exchange for others truer.—I had not then read a sentence of Coleridge, which is to this effect: “If any one begins by loving Christianity more than the truth, he will proceed to love his Church more than Christianity, and will end by loving his own opinions better than either.” A dim conception of this was in my mind; and I saw that the genuine love of God was essentially connected with loving truth as truth, and not truth as our own accustomed thought, truth as our old prejudice; and that the real saint can never be afraid to let God teach him one lesson more, or unteach him one more error. Then I rejoiced to feel how right and sound had been our principle, that no creed can possibly be used as the touchstone of spirituality: for man morally excels man, as far as creeds are concerned, not by assenting to true propositions, but by loving them because they are discerned to be true, and by possessing a faculty of discernment sharpened by the love of truth. Such are God’s true apostles, differing enormously in attainment and elevation, but all born to ascend. For these to quarrel between themselves, because they do not agree in



opinions, is monstrous. *Sentiment* surely, not *opinion*, is the bond of the Spirit; and as the love of God, so the love of truth is a high and sacred sentiment, in comparison to which our creeds are mean.

Well, I had been misjudged; I had been absurdly measured by other men's creed: but might I not have similarly misjudged others, since I had from early youth been under similar influences? How many of my seniors at Oxford I had virtually despised because they were not evangelical! Had I had opportunity of testing their spirituality? or had I the faculty of so doing? Had I not really condemned them as unspiritual, barely because of their creed? On trying to reproduce the past to my imagination, I could not condemn myself quite as sweepingly as I wished; but my heart smote me on account of one. I had a brother, with whose name all England was resounding for praise or blame; from his sympathies, through pure hatred of Popery, I had long since turned away, What was this but to judge him by his creed? True, his whole theory was nothing but Romanism transferred to England: but what then? I had studied with the deepest interest Mrs. Schimmelpenninck's account of the Portroyalists, and though I was aware that she exhibits only the bright side of her subject, yet the absolute excellencies of her nuns and priests showed that Romanism *as such* was not fatal to spirituality. They were persecuted: this did them good perhaps, or certainly exhibited their brightness. So too my

brother surely was struggling after truth, fighting for freedom to his own heart and mind, against church articles and stagnancy of thought. For this he deserved both sympathy and love: but I, alas! had not known and seen his excellence. But now God had taught me more largeness by bitter sorrow, working the peaceable fruit of righteousness; at last then I might admire my brother. I therefore wrote to him a letter of contrition. Some change, either in his mind, or in his view of my position, had taken place; and I was happy to find him once more able, not only to feel fraternally, as he had always done, but to act also fraternally. Nevertheless, to this day it is to me a painfully unsolved mystery, how a mind can claim its freedom in order to establish bondage.

For the *peculiarities* of Romanism I feel nothing, and I can pretend nothing, but contempt, hatred, disgust or horror. But this system of falsehood, fraud, and unscrupulous and unrelenting ambition, will never be destroyed, while Protestants keep up their insane anathemas against opinion. These are the outworks of the Romish citadel: until they are razed to the ground, the citadel will defy attack. If we are to blind our eyes, in order to accept an article of King Edward VI., or an argument of St. Paul's, why not blind them so far as to accept the Council of Trent? If we are to pronounce that a man "without doubt shall perish everlastingly," unless he believes the self-contradictions of the pseudo-Athanasian Creed, why should we shrink



from a similar anathema on those who reject the self-contradictions of Transubstantiation? If one man is cast out of God's favour for eliciting error while earnestly searching after truth, and another remains in favour by passively receiving the word of a Church, of a Priest, or of an Apostle, then to search for truth is dangerous; apathy is safer; then the soul does not come directly into contact with God and learn of him, but has to learn from, and unconvincedly submit to, some external authority. This is the germ of Romanism: its legitimate development makes us Pagans outright.

---

But in what position was I now, towards the apostles? Could I admit their inspiration, when I no longer thought them infallible? Undoubtedly. What could be clearer on every hypothesis, than that they were inspired on and after the day of Pentecost, and *yet* remained ignorant and liable to mistake about the relation of the Gentiles to the Jews? The moderns have erringly introduced into the idea of inspiration that of infallibility, to which either *omniscience* or *dictation* is essential. That there was no dictation, is proved by the variety of style in the Scriptural writers; that they were not omniscient, is manifest. Nay, if human minds had not been left to them, could they have argued persuasively? was not the superior success of their

preaching to that of Christ, perhaps due to their sharing in the prejudices of their contemporaries? An orator is most persuasive, when he is lifted above his hearers on those points only on which he is to reform their notions. The apostles were not omniscient: granted: but it cannot hence be inferred that they did not know the message given them by God. Their knowledge, however perfect, must yet in a human mind have coexisted with ignorance; and nothing but a perpetual miracle could prevent ignorance from now and then exhibiting itself in error of fact or argument. But hence to infer that they are not inspired, and are not messengers from God, is quite gratuitous. Who indeed imagines that John or Paul understood astronomy so well as Sir William Herschel? Those who believe that the apostles might err in human science, need not the less revere their moral and spiritual wisdom.

At the same time it became a matter of duty to me, if possible, to discriminate the authoritative from the unauthoritative in the Scripture, or at any rate avoid to accept and propagate as true that which is false, even if it be false only as science and not as religion. I unawares,—more perhaps from old habit than from distinct conviction,—started from the assumption that my fixed point of knowledge was to be found in the sensible or scientific, not in the moral. I still retained from my old Calvinistic doctrine a way of proceeding as if purely moral judgment were my weak side, at least in criticizing the Scripture: so that I preferred never to appeal to



direct moral and spiritual considerations, except in the most glaringly necessary cases. Thus, while I could not accept the panegyric on Jael, and on Abraham's intended sacrifice of his son, I did not venture unceremoniously to censure the extirpation of the Canaanites by Joshua: of which I barely said to myself, that it "certainly needed very strong proof" of the divine command to justify it. I still went so far in timidity as to hesitate to reject on internal evidence the account of heroes or giants begotten by angels, who, enticed by the love of women, left heaven for earth. The narrative in Gen. vi. had long appeared to me undoubtedly to bear this sense; and to have been so understood by Jude and Peter (2 Pet. ii.), as, I believe, it also was by the Jews and early Fathers. I did at length set it aside as incredible; not however from moral repugnance to it, (for I feared to trust the soundness of my instinct,) but because I had slid into a new logical canon,—that *I must not obtrude miracles on the Scripture narrative*. The writers tell their story without showing any consciousness that it involves physiological difficulties. To invent a miracle in order to defend this, began to seem to me unwarrantable.

It had become notorious to the public, that Geologists rejected the idea of a universal deluge as physically impossible. Whence could the water come, to cover the highest mountains? Two replies were attempted: 1. The flood of Noah is not described as universal: 2. The flood was indeed

universal, but the water was added and removed by miracle.—Neither reply however seemed to me valid. First, the language respecting the universality of the flood is as strong as any that could be written: moreover it is stated that the tops of the high hills *were all covered*, and after the water subsides, the ark settles on the mountains of Armenia. Now in Armenia, of necessity numerous peaks would be seen, unless the water covered them, and especially Ararat. But a flood that covered Ararat would overspread all the continents, and leave only a few summits above. If then the account in Genesis is to be received, the flood was universal. Secondly: the narrator represents the surplus water to have come from the clouds and perhaps from the sea, and again to drain back into the sea. Of a miraculous *creation and destruction* of water, he evidently does not dream.

Other impossibilities came forward: the insufficient dimensions of the ark to take in all the creatures; the unsuitability of the same climate to arctic and tropical animals for a full year; the impossibility of feeding them and avoiding pestilence; and especially, the total disagreement of the modern facts of the dispersion of animals, with the idea that they spread anew from Armenia as their centre. We have no right to call in a series of miracles to solve difficulties, of which the writer was unconscious. The ark itself was expressly devised to economize miracle, by making a fresh creation of animals needless.

Different in kind was the objection which I felt to the story, which is told twice concerning Abraham and once concerning Isaac, of passing off a wife as a sister. Allowing that such a thing was barely not impossible, the improbability was so intense, as to demand the strictest and most cogent proof: yet when we asked, Who testifies it? no proof appeared that it was Moses; or, supposing it to be he, what his sources of knowledge were. And this led to the far wider remark, that nowhere in the book of Genesis is there a line to indicate who is the writer, or a sentence to imply that the writer believes himself to write by special information from God. Nay, it is well known that there are numerous small phrases which denote a later hand than that of Moses. The kings of Israel are once alluded to historically, Gen. xxxvi. 31.

Why then was any thing improbable to be believed on the writer's word? as, for instance, the story of Babel and the confusion of tongues? One reply only seemed possible; namely, that we believe the Old Testament in obedience to the authority of the New: and this threw me again to consider the references to the Old Testament in the Christian Scriptures.

---

But here, the difficulties soon became manifestly more and more formidable. In opening Matthew, we meet with quotations from the Old Testament

applied in the most startling way. First is the prophecy about the child Immanuel; which in Isaiah no unbiassed interpreter would have dreamed could apply to Jesus. Next; the words of Hosea, "Out of Egypt have I called my son," which do but record the history of Israel, are imagined by Matthew to be prophetic of the return of Jesus from Egypt. This instance moved me much; because I thought, that if the text were "spiritualized," so as to make Israel mean *Jesus*, Egypt also ought to be spiritualized and mean *the world*, not retain its geographical sense, which seemed to be carnal and absurd in such a connection: for Egypt is no more to Messiah than Syria or Greece. One of the most decisive testimonies to the Old Testament which the New contains, is in John x. 35, where I hardly knew how to allow myself to characterize the reasoning. The case stands thus. The 82nd Psalm rebukes *unjust* governors; and at length says to them: "I have said, Ye are gods, and all of you are children of the most high: but ye shall die like men, and fall like one of the princes." In other words:—"though we are apt *to think* of rulers *as if* they were superhuman, yet they shall meet the lot of common men." Well: how is this applied in John?—Jesus has been accused of blasphemy, for saying that "He and his Father are one;" and in reply, he quotes the verse, "I have said, Ye are gods," as his sufficient justification for calling himself Son of God: for "the Scripture cannot be broken." I dreaded to precipitate myself into



shocking unbelief, if I followed out the thoughts that this suggested: and (I know not how) for a long time yet put it off.

The quotations from the Old Testament in St. Paul had always been a mystery to me. The more I now examined them, the clearer it appeared that they were based on untenable Rabbinical principles. Nor are those in the Acts and in the Gospels any better. If we take free leave to canvass them, it may appear that not one quotation in ten is sensible and appropriate. And shall we then accept the decision of the New Testament writers as final, concerning the value and credibility of the Old Testament, when it is so manifest that they most imperfectly understood that book?

In fact the appeal to them proved too much. For Jude quotes the book of Enoch as an inspired prophecy, and yet, since Archbishop Laurence has translated it from the Ethiopian, we know that book to be a fable undeserving of regard, and undoubtedly not written by "Enoch, the seventh from Adam." Besides, it does not appear that any peculiar divine revelation taught them that the Old Testament is perfect truth. In point of fact, they only reproduce the ideas on that subject current in their age. So far as Paul deviates from the common Jewish view, it is in the direction of disparaging the Law as essentially imperfect. May it not seem that his remaining attachment to it was still exaggerated by old sentiment and patriotism?

I farther found that not only do the Evangelists

give us no hint that they thought themselves divinely inspired, or that they had any other than human sources of knowledge, but Luke most explicitly shows the contrary. He opens by stating to Theophilus, that since many persons have committed to writing the things handed down from eyewitnesses, it seemed good to him also to do the same, since he had "accurately attended to every thing from its sources (*ἀνωθεν*)."

He could not possibly have written thus, if he had been conscious of superhuman aids. How absurd then of us, to pretend that we know more than Luke knew of his own inspiration!

- In truth, the arguments of theologians to prove the inspiration (*i. e.* infallibility) of Matthew, Mark and Luke are sometimes almost ludicrous. My lamented friend John Sterling has thus summed up Dr. Henderson's arguments about Mark. "Mark was probably inspired, because he was an acquaintance of Peter, and because Dr. Henderson would be reviled by other Dissenters, if he doubted it."

---

About this time, the great phenomenon of these three gospels,—the casting out of devils,—pressed forcibly on my attention. I now dared to look full into the facts, and saw that the disorders described were perfectly similar to epilepsy, mania, catalepsy, and other known maladies. Nay, the deaf, the

dumb, the hunchbacked, are spoken of as devil-ridden. I farther knew that such diseases are still ascribed to evil genii in Mussulman countries: nay, a vicious horse is believed by the Arabs to be *majnūn*, possessed by a Jin or Genie. Devils also are cast out in Abyssinia to this day. Having fallen in with Farmer's treatise on the Demoniacs, I carefully studied it; and found it to prove unanswerably, that a belief in demoniacal possession is a superstition not more respectable than that of witchcraft. But Farmer did not at all convince me, that the three Evangelists do not share the vulgar error. Nay, the instant we believe that the imagined possessions were only various forms of disease, we are forced to draw conclusions of the utmost moment, most damaging to the credit of the narrators.

Clearly, they are then convicted of misstating facts, under the influence of superstitious credulity. They represent demoniacs as having a supernatural acquaintance with Jesus, which, it now becomes manifest, they cannot have had. The devils cast out of two demoniacs (or one) are said to have entered into a herd of swine. This must have been a credulous fiction. Indeed, the casting out of devils is so very prominent a part of the miraculous agency ascribed to Jesus, as at first sight to impair our faith in his miracles altogether.

I however took refuge in the consideration, that when Jesus wrought one great miracle, popular credulity would inevitably magnify it into ten; hence

the discovery of foolish exaggerations is no disproof of a real miraculous agency: nay, perhaps the contrary. Are they not a sort of false halo round a disk of glory,—a halo so congenial to human nature, that the absence of it might be even wielded as an objection? Moreover John tells of no demoniacs: does not this show his freedom from popular excitement? Observe the great miracles narrated by John,—the blind man,—and Lazarus,—how different in kind from those on demoniacs! how incapable of having been mistaken! how convincing! His statements cannot be explained away: their whole tone moreover is peculiar. On the contrary, the three first gospels abound in much, that (after we see the writers to be credulous) must be judged legendary.

The two first chapters of Matthew abound in dreams. Dreams? Was indeed the “immaculate conception” merely told to Joseph in a *dream*? a dream which not he only was to believe, but we also, when reported to us by a person wholly unknown, who wrote 70 or 80 years after the fact, and gives us no clue to his sources of information! Shall I reply that he received his information by miracle? But why more than Luke? and Luke evidently was conscious only of human information. Besides, inspiration has not saved Matthew from error about demons; and why then about Joseph’s dream and its highly important contents?

In former days I had never dared to let my thoughts dwell inquisitively on the *star*, which the



wise men saw in the East, and which accompanied them and pointed out the house where the young child was. I now thought of it, only to see that it was a legend fit for credulous ages; and that it must be rejected in common with Herod's massacre of the children,—an atrocity unknown to Josephus. How difficult it was to reconcile the flight into Egypt with the narrative of Luke, I had known from early days: I now saw that it was waste time to try to reconcile them.

But perhaps I might say:—"That the writers should make errors about the *infancy* of Jesus was natural; they were distant from the time: but that will not justly impair the credit of events, to which they may possibly have been contemporaries or even eyewitnesses."—How then would this apply to the Temptation, at which certainly none of them were present? Is it accident, that the same three, who abound in the demoniacs, tell also the scene of the Devil and Jesus on a pinnacle of the temple; while the same John who omits the demoniacs, omits also this singular story? It being granted that the writers are elsewhere mistaken, to criticize the tale was to reject it.

In near connection with this followed the discovery, that many other miracles of the Bible are wholly deficient in that moral dignity, which is supposed to place so great a chasm between them and ecclesiastical writings. Why should I look with more respect on the napkins taken from Paul's body, (Acts xix. 12) than on pocket-handkerchiefs dipt in

the blood of martyrs? How could I believe, on this same writer's hearsay, that "the Spirit of the Lord caught away Philip" (viii. 39), transporting him through the air, as oriental genii are supposed to do? Or what moral dignity was there in the curse on the barren figtree,—about which moreover we are so perplexingly told that it was *not* the time for figs? What was to be said of a cure, wrought by touching the hem of Jesus' garment, which drew physical *virtue* from him without his will? And how could I distinguish the genius of the miracle of tributemoney in the fish's mouth, from those of the apocryphal gospels? What was I to say of useless miracles, like that of Peter and Jesus walking on the water,—or that of many saints coming out of the graves to show themselves, or of a poetical sympathy of the elements, such as the earthquake and rending of the temple-veil when Jesus died? Altogether, I began to feel that Christian advocates commit the flagrant sophism of treating every objection as an isolated "cavil," and overrule each as obviously insufficient, with the same confidence as if it were the only one. Yet in fact, the objections collectively are very powerful, and cannot be set aside by supercilious airs, and by calling unbelievers "superficial," any more than by harsh denunciations.

Pursuing the same thought to the Old Testament, I discerned there also no small sprinkling of grotesque or unmoral miracles. A dead man is raised to life, when his body by accident touches the bones of Elisha: as though Elisha had been a Romish

saint, and his bones a sacred relic. Uzzah, when the ark is in danger of falling, puts out his hand to save it, and is struck dead for his impiety! Was this the judgment of the Father of mercies and God of all comfort? What was I to make of God's anger with Abimelech (Gen. xx.), whose sole offence was, the having believed Abraham's lie? for which a miraculous barrenness was sent on all the females of Abimelech's tribe, and was bought off only by splendid presents to the favoured deceiver.—Or was it at all credible that the lying and fraudulent Jacob should have been so specially loved by God, more than the rude animal Esau?—Or could I any longer overlook the gross imagination of antiquity, which made Abraham and Jehovah dine on the same carnal food, like Tantalus with the gods;—which fed Elijah by ravens, and set angels to bake cakes for him? Such is a specimen of the flood of difficulties which poured in, through the great breach which the demoniacs had made in the credit of Biblical marvels.

While I was in this stage of progress, I had a second time the advantage of meeting Dr. Arnold, and had satisfaction in finding that he rested the main strength of Christianity on the gospel of John. The great similarity of the other three seemed to him enough to mark that they flowed from sources very similar, and that the first gospel had no pretensions to be regarded as the actual writing of Matthew. This indeed had been for some time clear to me, though I now cared little about the

author's name, when he was proved to be credulous. —Arnold regarded John's gospel as abounding with smaller touches which marked the eyewitness, and altogether, to be the vivid and simple picture of a divine reality, undeformed by credulous legend. In this view I was gratified to repose, in spite of a few partial misgivings, and returned to investigations concerning the Old Testament.

For some time back I had paid special attention to the book of Genesis; and I had got aid in the analysis of it from a German volume. That it was based on *at least* two different documents, technically called the Elohistie and Jehovistic, soon became clear to me: and an orthodox friend who acknowledged the fact, regarded it as a high recommendation of the book, that it was conscientiously made out of pre-existing materials, and was not a fancy that came from the brain of Moses. My good friend's argument was not a happy one: no written record could exist of things and times which preceded the invention of writing.—After analyzing this book with great minuteness, I now proceeded to Exodus and Numbers; and was soon assured, that these had not, any more than Genesis, come forth from one primitive witness of the facts. In all these books is found the striking phenomenon of *duplicate* or even *triplicate narratives*. The Creation of man is three times told. The account of the Flood is made up out of two discrepant originals, marked by the names Elohim and Jehovah; of which one makes Noah take into the ark *seven* pairs



of clean, and *single* (or double?) pairs of unclean, beasts; while the other gives him two and two of all kinds, without distinguishing the clean. The two documents may indeed in this narrative be almost rediscovered by mechanical separation. The triple statement of Abraham and Isaac passing off a wife for a sister was next in interest; and here also the two which concern Abraham are contrasted as Jehovistic and Elohistic. A similar double account is given of the origin of circumcision, of the names Isaac, Israel, Bethel, Beersheba. Still more was I struck by the positive declaration in Exodus (vi. 3) that *God was NOT known to Abraham, Isaac and Jacob by the name Jehovah*; while the book of Genesis abounds with the contrary fact. This alone convinced me beyond all dispute, that these books did not come from one and the same hand, but are conglomerates formed out of older materials, unartistically and mechanically joined.

Indeed a fuller examination showed in Exodus and Numbers a twofold miracle of the quails, of which the latter is so told as to indicate entire unacquaintance with the former. There is a double description of the manna, a needless second appointment of Elders of the congregation: water is twice brought out of the rock by the rod of Moses, whose faith is perfect the first time and fails the second time. The name of Meribah is twice bestowed. There is a double promise of a guardian angel, a double consecration of Aaron and his sons: nay, I

found a double or even threefold\* copy of the Decalogue. Comprising Deuteronomy within my view, I met two utterly incompatible accounts of Aaron's death; for Deuteronomy makes him die *before* reaching Meribah Kadesh, where, according to Numbers, he sinned and incurred the penalty of death (Num. xx. 24, Deut. x. 6: cf. Num. xxxiii. 31, 38).

That there was error on a great scale in all this, was undeniable; and I began to see at least one *source* of the error. The celebrated miracle of "the sun standing still" has long been felt as too violent a derangement of the whole globe to be used by the most High as a means of discomfiting an army: and I had acquiesced in the idea that the miracle was *ocular* only. But in reading the passage, (Josh. x. 12—14,) I for the first time observed that the narrative rests on the authority of a poetical book which bears the name of Jasher†. He who composed—"Sun, stand thou still upon Gibeon; and thou, Moon, in the valley of Ajalon!"—like other poets, called on the Sun and Moon to stand and look on Joshua's deeds; but he could not anticipate that his words would be hardened into fact by a prosaic interpreter, and appealed to in proof of a stupendous miracle. The commentator could not tell what *the Moon* had to do with it; yet he has

\* I have discussed this in my "Hebrew Monarchy."

† This poet celebrated also the deeds of David (2 Sam. i. 18,) according to our translation: if so, he was many centuries later than Joshua: however, the sense of the Hebrew is a little obscure.

quoted honestly.—This presently led me to observe other marks that the narrative has been made up, at least in part, out of old poetry. Of these the most important are in Exodus xv. and Num. xxi., in the latter of which three different poetical fragments are quoted, and one of them is expressly said to be from “the book of the wars of Jehovah,” apparently a poem descriptive of the conquest of Canaan by the Israelites. As for Exodus xv. it appeared to me (in that stage, and after so abundant proof of error,) almost certain that Moses’ song is the primitive authority, out of which the prose narrative of the passage of the Red Sea has been elaborated. Especially since, after the song, the writer adds: v. 19. “For the horse of Pharaoh went in with his chariots and with his horsemen into the sea, and the Lord brought again the waters of the sea upon them: but the children of Israel went on dry land in the midst of the sea.” This comment scarcely could have been added, if the detailed account of ch. xiv. had been written previously. The song of Moses *implies no miracle at all*: it is merely high poetry. A later prosaic age took the hyperbolic phrases of v. 8 literally, and so generated the comment of v. 19, and a still later time expanded this into the elaborate xiv<sup>th</sup>. chapter.

Other proofs crowded upon me, that cannot here be enlarged upon. Granting then (for argument) that the four first books of the Pentateuch are a compilation, made long after the event, I tried for awhile to support the very arbitrary opinion, that

Deuteronomy (all but its last chapter) which seemed to be a more homogeneous composition, was alone and really the production of Moses. This however needed some definite proof: for if tradition was not sufficient to guarantee the whole Pentateuch, it could not guarantee to me Deuteronomy alone. I proceeded to investigate the external history of the Pentateuch, and in so doing, came to the story, how the book of the Law was *found* in the reign of the young king Josiah, nearly at the end of the Jewish monarchy. As I considered the narrative, my eyes were opened. If the book had previously been the received sacred law, it could not possibly have been so lost, that its contents were unknown, and the fact of its loss forgotten: it was therefore evidently *then first compiled*, or at least then first produced and made authoritative to the nation. And with this the general course of the history best agrees, and all the phenomena of the books themselves.

Many of the Scriptural facts were old to me: to the importance of the history of Josiah I had perhaps even become dim-sighted by familiarity. Why had I not long ago seen that my conclusions ought to have been different from those of prevalent orthodoxy?—I found that I had been cajoled by the primitive assumptions, which though not clearly *stated*, are unceremoniously *used*. Dean Graves, for instance, always takes for granted, that, *until the contrary shall be demonstrated*, it is to be firmly believed that the Pentateuch is from the pen of Moses. He proceeds to set aside, *one by*



*one*, as not demonstrative, the indications that it is of later origin : and when other means fail, he says that the particular verses remarked on were added by a later hand ! I considered that if we were debating the antiquity of an Irish book, and in one page of it were found an allusion to the Parliamentary Union with England, we should at once regard the whole book, *until the contrary should be proved*, as the work of this century ; and not endure the reasoner, who, in order to uphold a theory that it is five centuries old, pronounced that sentence “ evidently to be from a later hand.” Yet in this arbitrary way Dean Graves and all his coadjutors set aside, one by one, the texts which point at the date of the Pentateuch. I was possessed with indignation. Oh sham science ! Oh false-named Theology !

O mihi tam longæ maneat pars ultima vitæ,  
Spiritus et, quantum sat erit tua dicere facta !

Yet I waited some eight years longer, lest I should on so grave a subject write any thing premature. Especially I felt that it was necessary to learn more of what the erudition of Germany had done on these subjects. Michaelis on the New Testament had fallen into my hands several years before, and I had found the greatest advantage from his learning and candour. About this time I also had begun to get more or less aid from four or five living German divines ; but none produced any strong impression on me but De Wette. The two

grand lessons which I learned from him, were, the greater recency of Deuteronomy, and the very untrustworthy character of the book of Chronicles; with which discovery, the true origin of the Pentateuch becomes still clearer\*. After this, I heard of Hengstenberg as the most learned writer on the opposite side, and furnished myself with his work in defence of the antiquity of the Pentateuch: but it only showed me how hopeless a cause he had undertaken.

---

In this period I came to a totally new view of many parts of the Bible; and not to be tedious, it will suffice here to sum up the results.

The first books which I looked at as doubtful, were the Apocalypse and the Epistle to the Hebrews. From the Greek style I felt assured that the former was not by John†, nor the latter by Paul. In Michaelis I first learnt the interesting fact of Luther having vehemently repudiated the Apocalypse, so that he not only declared its spuriousness in the Preface of his Bible, but solemnly charged his

\* The English reader may consult Theodore Parker's translation of De Wette's Introduction to the Canon of Scripture. I have also amply exhibited the vanity of the *Chronicles* in my "Hebrew Monarchy." De Wette has a separate treatise on the *Chronicles*.

† If the date of the Apocalypse is twenty years earlier than that of the fourth Gospel, I now feel no such difficulty in their being the composition of the same writer.

successors not to print his translation of the Apocalypse without annexing this avowal:—a charge which they presently disobeyed. Such is the habitual unfairness of ecclesiastical corporations. I was afterwards confirmed by Neander in the belief that the Apocalypse is a false prophecy. The only chapter of it which is interpreted,—the 17th—appears to be a political speculation suggested by the civil war of Otho, Vitellius and Vespasian; and erroneously opines that the eighth emperor of Rome is to be the last, and is to be one of the preceding emperors restored,—probably Nero, who was believed to have escaped to the kings of the East.—As for the Epistle to the Hebrews, (which I was disposed to believe Luther had well guessed to be the production of Apollos,) I now saw quite a different genius in it from that of Paul, as more artificial and savouring of rhetorical culture. As to this, the learned Germans are probably unanimous.

Next to these, the Song of Solomon fell away. I had been accustomed to receive this as a sacred representation of the loves of Christ and the Church: but after I was experimentally acquainted with the playful and extravagant genius of man's love for woman, I saw the Song of Solomon with new eyes, and became entirely convinced that it consists of fragments of love-songs, some of them rather voluptuous.

After this, it followed that the so-called *Canon* of the Jews could not guarantee to us the value of

the writings. Consequently, such books as Ruth and Esther, (the latter indeed not containing one religious sentiment,) stood forth at once in their natural insignificance. Ecclesiastes also seemed to me a meagre and shallow production. Chronicles I now learned to be not credulous only, but unfair, perhaps so far as actual dishonesty. Not one of the historical books of the Old Testament could approve itself to me as of any high antiquity or of any spiritual authority; and in the New Testament I found the three first books and the Acts to contain many doubtful and some untrue accounts, and many incredible miracles.

Many persons, after reading thus much concerning me, will be apt to say: "Of course then you gave up Christianity?"—Far from it. I gave up all that was clearly untenable, and clung the firmer to all that still appeared sound. I had found out that the Bible was not to be my religion, nor its perfection any tenet of mine: but what then? Did Paul go about preaching the Bible? nay, but he preached Christ. The New Testament did not as yet exist: to the Jews he necessarily argued from the Old Testament; but that "faith in the book" was no part of Paul's gospel, is manifest from his giving no list of sacred books to his Gentile converts. Twice indeed in his epistles to Timothy, he recommends the Scriptures of the Old Testament; but even in the more striking passage, (on which such exaggerated stress has been laid,) the spirit of his remark is essentially apologetic. "Despise not,



oh Timothy," (is virtually his exhortation,) "the Scriptures that you learned as a child. Although now you have the Spirit to teach you, yet that does not make the older writers useless : for "*every divinely inspired writing is also profitable for instruction, &c.*" In Paul's religion, respect for the Scriptures was a means, not an end. The Bible was made for man, not man for the Bible.

Thus the question with me was: "May I still receive Christ as a Saviour from sin, a Teacher and Lord sent from heaven, and can I find an adequate account of what He came to do or teach?" And my reply was, Yes. The gospel of John alone gave an adequate account of him: the other three, though often erroneous, had clear marks of simplicity, and in so far confirmed the general belief in the supernatural character and works of Jesus. Then the conversion of Paul was a powerful argument. I had Peter's testimony to the resurrection, and to the transfiguration. Many of the prophecies were eminently remarkable, and unaccountable except as miraculous. The origin of Judaism and spread of Christianity appeared to be beyond common experience, and were perhaps fairly to be called supernatural. Broad views such as these did not seem to be affected by the special conclusions at which I had arrived concerning the books of the Bible. I conceived myself to be resting under an Indian Figtree, which is supported by certain grand stems, but also lets down to the earth many small branches, which seem to the eye to prop the

tree but in fact are supported by it. If they were cut away, the tree would not be less strong. So neither was the tree of Christianity weakened by the loss of its apparent props. I might still enjoy its shade, and eat of its fruits, and bless the hand that planted it.

In the course of this period I likewise learnt how inadequate allowance I had once made for the repulsion produced by my own dogmatic tendency on other people's sympathies. I now often met persons of Evangelical opinion, but could seldom have any interchange of religious sentiment with them, because every word they uttered warned me that I could escape controversy only while I kept them at a distance: moreover, if any little difference of opinion led us into amicable argument, they uniformly reasoned by quoting texts. This was now inadmissible with me, but I could only have done mischief by going farther than a dry disclaimer; after which indeed I saw I was generally looked on as "an infidel." No doubt the parties who so came into collision with me, approached me often with an earnest desire and hope to find some spiritual good in me, but withdrew disappointed, finding me either cold and defensive, or (perhaps they thought) warm and disputatious. Thus, as long as artificial tests of spirituality are allowed to exist, their erroneousness is not easily exposed by the mere wear and tear of life. When the collision of opinion is very strong, two good men may meet, and only be confirmed in their prejudices against

one another: for in order that one may elicit the spiritual sympathies of the other, a certain liberality is prerequisite. Without this, each prepares to shield himself from attack, or even holds out weapons of offence. Thus "articles of Communion" are essentially articles of Disunion.—On the other hand, if all tests of opinion in a church were heartily and truly done away, then the principles of spiritual affinity and repulsion would act quite undisturbed. Surely therefore this was the only right method?—Nevertheless, I saw the necessity of *one* test, "Jesus is the Son of God," and felt unpleasantly that one article tends infallibly to draw another after it. But I had too much, just then, to think of in other quarters, to care much about Church Systems.

## FIFTH PERIOD :

## FAITH AT SECOND HAND FOUND TO BE VAIN.

I RECKON my fifth period to begin from the time when I had totally abandoned the claims of "the Canon" of Scripture, however curtailed, to be received as the object of faith, as free from error, or as something raised above moral criticism; and looked out for some broader foundation for my creed than any sacred Letter. But an entirely new inquiry had begun to engage me at intervals, viz., *the essential logic of these investigations*. Ought we in any case to receive moral truth in obedience to an apparent miracle of sense? or conversely, ought we ever to believe in sensible miracles because of their recommending some moral truth? I perceived that the endless jangling which goes on in detailed controversy, is inevitable, while the disputants are unawares at variance with one another, or themselves wavering, as to these pervading principles of evidence.—I regard my fifth period to come to an end with the decision of this question. Nevertheless many other important lines of inquiry were going forward simultaneously.

I found in the Bible itself,—and even in the very same book, as in the Gospel of John,—great uncertainty and inconsistency on this question. In one place Jesus reproves the demand of a miracle,



and blesses those who believe without miracles; in another, he requires that they will receive his doctrine (and submit to it as little children) because of his miracles. Now this is intelligible, if blind external obedience is the end of religion, and not Truth and inward Righteousness. An ambitious and unscrupulous *Church*, that desires, by fair means or foul, to make men's minds bow down to her, may say, "Only believe; and all is right. The end being gained,—Obedience to us,—we do not care about your reasons." But *God* cannot speak thus to man; and to a divine teacher we should peculiarly look for aid in getting clear views of the grounds of faith; because it is by a knowledge of these that we shall both be rooted on the true basis, and saved from the danger of false beliefs.

It therefore peculiarly vexed me to find so total a deficiency of clear and sound instruction in the New Testament, and eminently in the gospel of John, on so vital a question. The more I considered it, the more it appeared, as if Jesus were solely anxious to have people believe in Him, without caring on what grounds they believed, although that is obviously the main point. When to this was added the threat of "damnation" on those who did not believe, the case became far worse: for I felt that if such a threat were allowed to operate, I might become a Mohammedan or a Roman Catholic. Could I in any case rationally assign this as a ground for believing in Christ,—"because I am frightened by his threats"—?

Farther thought showed me that a question of *logic*, such as I here had before me, was peculiarly one on which the propagator of a new religion could not be allowed to dictate; for if so, every false system could establish itself. Let Hindooism dictate our logic,—let us submit to its tests of a divine revelation, and its mode of applying them,—and we may perhaps at once find ourselves necessitated to “become little children” in a Brahminical school. Might not then this very thing account for the Bible not enlightening us on the topic? namely, since Logic, like Mathematics, belongs to the common intellect.—Possibly so: but still, it cannot reconcile us to *vacillations* and *contradictions* in the Bible on so critical a point.

Gradually I saw that deeper and deeper difficulties lay at bottom. If Logic *cannot* be matter of authoritative revelation, so long as the nature of the human mind is what it is,—if it appears, as a fact, that in the writings and speeches of the New Testament the logic is far from lucid,—if we are to compare Logic with Mathematics and other sciences, which grew up with civilization and long time,—we cannot doubt that the apostles imbibed the logic, like the astronomy, of their own day, with all its defects. Indeed, the same is otherwise plain. Paul’s reasonings are those of a Gamaliel, and often are indefensible by our logical notions. John also, (as I had been recently learning,) has a wonderful similarity to Philo. This being the case, it becomes of deep interest to us to know,—if we are to accept

results *at second hand* from Paul and John,—*what was the sort of evidence which convinced them.* The moment this question is put, we see the essential defect to which we are exposed, in not being able to cross-examine them. Paul says that “Christ appeared to him :” elsewhere, that he has “received of the Lord” certain facts, concerning the Holy Supper: and that his Gospel was “given to him by revelation.” If any modern made such statements to us, and on this ground demanded our credence, it would be allowable, and indeed obligatory, to ask many questions of him. What does he *mean*, by saying that he has had a “revelation?” Did he see a sight, or hear a sound? or was it an inward impression? and how does he distinguish it as divine? Until these questions are fully answered, we have no materials at all before us for deciding to accept his results: to believe him, merely because he is earnest and persuaded, would be judged to indicate the weakness of inexperience. How then can it be pretended that we have, or can possibly get, the means of assuring ourselves that the apostles held correct principles of evidence and applied them justly, when we are not able to interrogate them?

Farther, it appears that *our* experience of delusion forces us to enact a very severe test of supernatural revelation. No doubt, we can conceive that which is equivalent to a *new sense* opening to us; but then it must have verifications connecting it with the other senses. Thus, a particularly vivid sort of dream recurring with special marks, and

communicating at once heavenly and earthly knowledge, of which the latter was otherwise verified, would probably be admitted as a valid sort of evidence: but so intense would be the interest and duty to have all unravelled and probed to the bottom, that we should think it impossible to verify the new sense too anxiously, and we should demand the fullest particulars of the divine transaction. On the contrary, it is undeniable that all such severity of research is rebuked in the Scriptures as unbelief. The deeply interesting *process* of receiving supernatural revelation,—which ought to be laid open and analyzed under the fullest light, if we are to believe the results at second hand,—is always and avowedly shrouded in impenetrable darkness. There surely is something here, which denotes that it is dangerous to resign ourselves to the conclusions of the apostles, when their logical notions are so different from ours.

I farther inquired, what sort of miracle I could conceive, that would alter my opinion on a moral question. Hosea was divinely ordered to go and unite himself to an impure woman: could I possibly think that God ordered *me* to do so, if I heard a voice in the air commanding it? Should I not rather disbelieve my hearing, than disown my moral perceptions? If not, where am I stop? I may practise all sorts of heathenism. A man who, in obedience to a voice in the air, kills his innocent wife or child, will either be called mad, and shut



up for safety, or will be hanged as a desperate fanatic: do I dare to condemn this modern judgment of him? Would any conceivable miracle justify my slaying my wife? God forbid! It *must* be morally right, to believe moral rather than sensible perceptions. No outward impressions on the eye or ear can be so valid an assurance to me of God's will, as my inward judgment. How amazing then that Paul and James could look on Abraham's intention to slay his son, as indicating a praiseworthy faith!—And yet not amazing: it does but show that these apostles, like ourselves, scrutinized antiquity with different eyes from modern events. If Paul had been ordered by a supernatural voice to slay Peter, he would have attributed the voice to the devil, “the prince of the power of the air,” and would have despised it. He praises Abraham, but he certainly would never have imitated him. Just so, the modern divines who laud Joseph's piety towards Mary, would be very differently affected, if events and persons were transported to the present day.

But to return. Let it be granted that no sensible miracle would authorize me so to violate my moral perceptions as to slay (that is, to murder) my innocent wife. May it nevertheless authorize me to invade a neighbour country, slaughter the people and possess their cities, although without such a miracle the deed would be deeply criminal? It is impossible to say that here, more than in the former

case, miracles\* can turn aside the common laws of morality. Neither therefore could they justify Joshua's war of extermination on the Canaanites, nor that of Samuel on the Amalekites; nor the murder of misbelievers by Elijah and by Josiah. If we are shocked at the idea of God releasing Mohammed from the vulgar law of marriage, we must as little endure relaxation in the great laws of justice and mercy.—But if only a *small* immorality is concerned, shall we then say that a miracle may justify it? Could it authorize me to plait a whip of small cords, and flog a preferment-hunter out of the pulpit? or would it justify me in publicly calling the Queen and her ministers “a brood of vipers, who cannot escape the damnation of hell”? Such questions go very deep into the heart of the Christian claims.

I had been accustomed to overbear objections of this sort by replying, that to allow of their being heard would amount to refusing leave to God to give commands to his creatures. For, it seems, if

\* If miracles were vouchsafed on the scale of a *new sense*, it is of course conceivable that they would reveal new masses of fact, tending to modify our moral judgments of particular actions: but nothing of this can be made out in Judaism or Christianity. Moreover, the permission of slaughter to the Jews is not directed against the seven nations of Canaan only, as modern theologians often erroneously assert: it is a *universal* permission of avaricious massacre and subjugation of “the cities which are very far off from thee, which are *not* of the cities of these nations”, Deut. xx. 15. The law itself may seem to have been drawn up after the pattern of David's conduct towards Edom, 1 Kings xi. 15, 16.

he *did* command, we, instead of obeying, should discuss whether the command was right and reasonable; and if we thought it otherwise, should conclude that God never gave it. The extirpation of the Canaanites is compared by divines to the execution of a criminal; and it is insisted, that if the voice of society may justify the executioner, much more may the voice of God.—But I now saw the analogy to be insufficient and unsound. Insufficient, because no executioner is justified in slaying those whom his conscience tells him to be innocent; and it is a barbarous morality alone, which pretends that he may make himself a passive tool of slaughter. But next, the analogy *assumes*, most falsely, that God, like man, speaks from without: that what we call Reason and Conscience is *not* his mode of commanding and revealing his will, but that words to strike the ear, or symbols displayed before the senses, are emphatically and exclusively “Revelation.” On the contrary, of our moral and spiritual God we know nothing without, every thing within. It is *in the spirit* that we meet him, not in the communications of sense.

The thoughts which here fill but a few pages, occupied me a long while in working out; because I consciously, with caution more than with timidity, declined to follow them rapidly. They came as dark suspicions or as flashing possibilities; and were again laid aside for reconsideration, lest I should be carried into antagonism to my old creed. For it is clear that great error arises in religion, by the

undue ardour of converts, who become bitter against the faith which they have left, and outrun in zeal their new associates. So also successive centuries oscillate too far on the right and on the left of truth. But so happy was my position, that I needed not to hurry: no practical duty forced me to rapid decision, and a suspense of judgment was not an unwholesome exercise. Meanwhile, I sometimes thought Christianity to be to me, like the great river Ganges to a Hindoo. Of its value he has daily experience: he has piously believed that its sources are in heaven, but of late the report has come to him, that it only flows from very high mountains of this earth. What is he to believe? He knows not exactly: he cares not much: in any case the river is the gift of God to him: its positive benefits cannot be affected by a theory concerning its source.

Such a comparison undoubtedly implies that he who uses it discerns for himself a moral excellence in Christianity, and *submits to it only so far as this discernment commands*. I had practically reached this point, long before I concluded my theoretical inquiries as to Christianity itself; but in the course of this fifth period numerous other overpowering considerations crowded upon me which I must proceed to state in outline.

---

All pious Christians feel, and all the New Testament proclaims, that Faith is a moral act and a test



of the moral and spiritual that is within us; so that he who is without faith, (faithless, unfaithful, "infidel,") is morally wanting and is cut off from God. Faith therefore is essentially *from within*. To assent to a religious proposition *solely* in obedience to an outward miracle, would be Belief; but would not be Faith, any more than is scientific conviction. Bishop Butler and all his followers can insist with much force on this topic, when it suits them, and can quote most aptly from the New Testament to the same effect. They deduce, that a really overpowering miraculous proof would have destroyed the moral character of Faith: yet they do not see that the argument supersedes the authoritative force of outward miracles entirely. It had always appeared to me very strange in these divines, to insist on the convincing and stupendous character of the Christian miracles, and then, in reply to the objection that they were *not* quite convincing, to say that the defect was purposely left "to try people's Faith." Faith in what? Not surely in the miracle, but in the truth as discernible by the heart *without aid of miracle*.

I conceived of two men, Nathaniel and Demas, encountering a pretender to miracles, a Simon Magus of the scriptures. Nathaniel is guileless, sweet-hearted and of strong moral sense, but in worldly matters rather a simpleton, and mistakes a juggler's tricks for supernatural wonders. Demas is a sharp fellow, who gets on well in the world, quick of eye and shrewd of wit, hard-headed and not to be im-

posed upon by his fellows; but destitute of any high religious aspirations or deep moral insight. The juggleries of Simon are readily discerned by Demas, but thoroughly deceive poor Nathaniel: what then is the latter to do?—If we enact the rule, that men are to “submit their understandings” to authoritative miracle, and that “revelation” is a thing of the outward senses, we alight on the unendurable absurdity, that Demas has faculties better fitted than those of Nathaniel for discriminating religious truth and error, and that Nathaniel, in obedience to eye and ear, which he knows to be very deceivable organs, is to abandon his moral perceptions.

Nor is the case altered, if instead of Simon in person, a huge thing called a Church is presented as a claimant of authority to Nathaniel. Suppose him to be a poor Spaniard, surrounded by false miracles, false erudition, and all the apparatus of reigning and unopposed Romanism. He cannot cope with the priests in cleverness,—detect their juggleries,—refute their historical falsehoods, disentangle their web of sophistry: but if he is truehearted, he may say: “You bid me not to keep faith with heretics: you defend murder, exile, imprisonment, fines, on men who will not submit their consciences to your authority: this I see to be wicked, though you ever so much pretend that God has taught it you.”—In short, nothing can be plainer, than that *the moral and spiritual sense is the only religious faculty of the poor man*; and that as Christianity in its origin was

preached to the poor, so it was to the inward senses that its first preachers appealed, as the supreme arbiters in the whole religious question. Is it not then absurd to say that in the act of conversion the convert is to trust his moral perception, and is ever afterwards to distrust it?

An incident had some years before come to my knowledge, which now seemed instructive. An educated, highly acute and thoughtful person, of very mature age, had become a convert to the Irving miracles, from an inability to distinguish them from those of the Pauline epistles; or to discern anything of falsity which would justify his rejecting them. But after several years he totally renounced them as a miserable delusion, *because* he found that a system of false doctrine was growing up and was propped by them. Here was a clear case of a man with all the advantages of modern education and science, who yet found the direct judgment of a professed miracle, that was acted before his senses, too arduous for him! He was led astray while he trusted his power to judge of miracle: he was brought right by trusting to his moral perceptions.

When we farther consider, that a knowledge of Natural Philosophy and Physiology does not belong to the poor, and comes later in time to mankind than a knowledge of morals;—that a Miracle can only be judged of by Philosophy,—that it is not even easy for philosophers to define what is a “miracle”—that to discern “a deviation from the course of nature,” implies a previous certain know-

ledge of what *the course of nature* is,—and that illiterate and early ages certainly have not this knowledge, and often have hardly even the idea,—it becomes quite a monstrosity to imagine that sensible and external miracles constitute the necessary process and guarantee of divine revelation.

Besides, if an angel appeared to my senses, and wrought miracles, how would that assure me of his moral qualities? Such miracles might prove his power and his knowledge, but whether malignant or benign, would remain doubtful, until by purely moral evidence, which no miracles could give, the doubt should be solved. This is the old difficulty about diabolical wonders. The moderns cut the knot, by denying that any but God can possibly work real miracles. But to establish their principle, they make their definition and verification of a miracle so strict, as would have amazed the apostles; and after all, the difficulty recurs, that miraculous phenomena will never prove the goodness and veracity of God, if we do not know these qualities in Him without miracle. There is then a deeper and an earlier revelation of God, which sensible miracles can never give.

We cannot distinctly learn, what was Paul's full idea of a divine revelation; but it is quite certain that he conceived it to be an *inward* thing. Dreams and visions were not excluded from influence, and more or less affected his moral judgment; but he did not, consciously and on principle, beat down his conscience in submission to outward impressions.



To do so, is indeed to destroy the moral character of Faith, and lay the axe to the root, not of Christian doctrine only, but of every possible spiritual system.

---

Meanwhile, new breaches were made in those citadels of my creed which had not yet surrendered.

I. Soon after the first reflux of my mind took place towards the Common Understanding, as a guide of life legitimately co-ordinate with Scripture, I was impressed with the consideration that *Free Learning* had acted on a great scale for the improvement of spiritual religion. My youthful creed had taught, that *the Bible* brought about the Protestant Reformation; and until my twenty-ninth year probably it had not occurred to me to question this. But I was first struck with the thought, that the Bible did not prevent the absurd iniquities of the Nicene and Post Nicene controversy, but that the Church, with the Bible in her hands, sank down into the gulf of Popery. How then was the Bible a sufficient explanation of her recovering out of Popery?

Even a superficial survey of the history shows, that the first improvement of spiritual doctrine in the dark ages came from a study of the moral works of Cicero and Boethius;—a fact notorious in the common historians. The Latin moralists effected, what (strange to think!) the New Testament could not do.

In the fifteenth century, when Constantinople was taken by the Turks, learned Greeks were driven out to Italy and to other parts of the West, and the Roman Catholic world began to read the old Greek literature. All historians agree, that the enlightenment of mind hence arising was the real origin of the Reformation; and learned Protestants of Germany have even believed, that this great event would have been brought about more equably and profoundly, if Luther had never lived, and the passions of the vulgar had never been stimulated against the externals of Romanism.

At any rate, it gradually opened upon me, that the free cultivation of the *understanding*, which Latin and Greek literature had imparted to Europe, were the chief causes of our comparative religious purity. The Greeks in Constantinople had been slaves. Without free intellect, the works of their fathers did their souls no good: so in Europe, just in proportion to the freedom of learning, has been the force of the result. In Spain and Italy such studies were nearly extinguished; in France and Austria they were crippled: in Protestant countries they have been freest. And then we impute all their effects to the Bible!

I at length saw how untenable is the argument drawn from the inward history of Christianity in favour of its superhuman origin. In fact: this religion cannot pretend to *selfsustaining power*. Hardly was it started on its course, when it began

to be polluted by the heathenism and false philosophy around it. With the decline of national genius and civil culture it became more and more debased. So far from being able to uphold the existing morality of the best Pagan teachers, it became barbarized itself, and sank into deep superstition and manifold moral corruption. From ferocious men it learnt ferocity. When civil society began to coalesce into order, Christianity also turned for the better, and presently learned to use the wisdom of Latin moralists. By gradual and human means, Europe, like ancient Greece, grew up towards better political institutions; and Christianity improved with them,—the Christianity of the more educated. Beyond Europe, where there have been no such institutions, there has been no Protestant Reformation:—that is, in the Greek, Armenian, Syrian, Coptic churches. Not unreasonably then do Franks in Turkey disown the title Nazarene, as denoting *that* Christianity which has not been purified by European laws and European learning. Christianity rises and sinks with political and literary influences: in so far, it does not differ from other religions.

The same applied to the origin and advance of Judaism. It began in polytheistic and idolatrous barbarism: it cleared into a hard monotheism, with much superstition adhering to it. This was farther improved by successive psalmists and prophets, until Judaism culminated. The Jewish faith was

eminently grand and pure; but there is nothing in this history which we can adduce in proof of preternatural and miraculous agency.

II. The facts concerning the outward spread of Christianity have also been disguised by the party spirit of Christians.

It had a great moral superiority over Roman paganism, in its humane doctrine of universal brotherhood, its unworldliness, its holiness: *consequently* it attracted to itself (among other and baser materials) all the purest natures and most enthusiastic temperaments: its first conquests were noble and admirable. But there is nothing superhuman or unusual in this. Mohammedism in the same way conquers those Pagan creeds which are morally inferior to it. The Seljuk and the Ottoman Turks were Pagans, but adopted the religion of Tartars and Persians whom they subjugated, because it was superior and was blended with a superior civilization; exactly as the German conquerors of the Western Empire of Rome adopted some form of Christianity.

But if it is true that *the sword* of Mohammed was the influence which subjected Arabia, Egypt, Syria and Persia to the religion of Islam, it is no less true that the Roman empire was first conquered to Christianity by the sword. Before Constantine, Christians were but a small fraction of the empire. In the preceding century they had gone on deteriorating in good sense and most probably therefore in moral worth, and had made no such rapid progress



in numbers as to imply that by the mere process of conversion they would ever Christianize the empire. In fact, *it was the Christian soldiers in Constantine's army, who conquered the empire for Christianity*; and finally, the sword of Theodosius violently suppressed heathen worship. So also, it was the spear of Charlemagne which drove the Saxons to baptism, and decided the extirpation of Paganism from Teutonic Europe. There is nothing in all this to distinguish the outward history of Christianity from that of Mohammedism. Barbarous tribes, now and then, venerating the superiority of our knowledge, adopt our religion: so have Pagan nations in Africa voluntarily become Musulmans. But neither we nor they can appeal to any case, where an old State-religion has yielded without warlike compulsion to the force of heavenly truth,—“charm we never so wisely.”

III. The moral advantages which we owe to Christianity have been exaggerated by the same party spirit.

1. We are told that Christianity is the great influence which has raised *womankind*:—this does not appear to be true. The old Roman matron was, relatively to her husband, morally as high as in modern Italy: nor is there any ground for supposing that modern women have advantage over the ancient in Spain and Portugal, where Germanic have been counteracted by Moorish influences. The relative position of the sexes in Homeric Greece exhibits nothing materially different from the pre-

sent day. In Armenia and Syria perhaps Christianity has done the service of extinguishing polygamy: this is creditable, though nowise miraculous. Judaism also unlearned polygamy, and made an unbidden improvement upon Moses. In short, only in countries where Germanic sentiment has taken root, do we see marks of any elevation of the female sex superior to that of Pagan antiquity; and as this elevation of the German woman in her deepest Paganism was already striking to Tacitus and his contemporaries, it is highly unreasonable to claim it as an achievement of Christianity.

In point of fact, Christian doctrine, as propounded by Paul, is not at all so honourable to woman as that which German soundness of heart has established. With Paul the *sole* reason for marriage, is, that a man may without sin vent his sensual desires. He teaches, that *but* for this object it would be better not to marry. He wishes that all were in this respect as free as himself, and calls it a special gift of God. He does not encourage a man to desire a mutual soul intimately to share griefs and joys; one in whom the confiding heart can repose, whose smile shall reward and soften toil, whose voice shall beguile sorrow. He does not seem aware that the fascinations of woman refine and chasten society; that virtuous attachment has in it an element of respect, which abashes and purifies, and which shields the soul, even when marriage is deferred; nor yet, that the union of two persons who have no previous affection can seldom

yield the highest fruits of matrimony, but often leads to the severest temptations. How *should* he have known all this? Courtship before marriage did not exist in the society open to him : hence he treats the propriety of giving away a maiden, as one in which *her* conscience, *her* likes and dislikes, are not concerned : 1 Cor. vii. 37, 38. If the law leaves the parent "power over his own will" and imposes no "necessity" to give her away, Paul decidedly advises to keep her unmarried.

The author of the Apocalypse, a writer of the first century, who was received in the second as John the apostle, holds up a yet more degrading view of the matrimonial relation. In one of his visions he exhibits 144,000 chosen saints, perpetual attendants of "the Lamb," and places the cardinal point of their sanctity in the fact, that "they were not defiled with women, but were virgins." Marriage therefore is defilement ! Protestant writers struggle in vain against this obvious meaning of the passage. Against all analogy of Scriptural metaphor, they gratuitously pretend that *women* mean *idolatrous religions* : namely, because in the Old Testament the Jewish Church is personified as a virgin betrothed to God, and an idol is spoken of as her paramour.

As a result of the apostolic doctrines, in the second, third, and following centuries, very gross views concerning the relation of the sexes prevailed, and have been everywhere transmitted where men's morality is exclusively formed from the New Tes-

tament. The marriage service of the Church of England, which incorporates the Pauline doctrine, is felt by English brides and bridegrooms to contain what is so offensive and degrading, that many clergymen mercifully make unlawful omissions. Paul had indeed expressly denounced *prohibitions* of marriage. In merely *dissuading* it, he gave advice, which, from his limited horizon and under his expectation of the speedy return of Christ, was sensible and good; but when this advice, with all its reasons, was made an oracle of eternal wisdom, it generated the monkish notions concerning womanhood. If the desire of a wife is a weakness, which the apostle would gladly have forbidden, only that he feared worse consequences, an enthusiastic youth cannot but infer that it is a higher state of perfection *not* to desire a wife, and therefore aspires to "the crown of virginity." Here at once is full-grown monkery. Hence that debasement of the imagination, which is directed perpetually to the lowest, instead of the highest side of the female nature. Hence the disgusting admiration and invocation of Mary's perpetual virginity. Hence the transcendental doctrine of her immaculate conception from Anne, the "grandmother of God."

The real elevators of the female sex, are the poets of Germanic culture, who have vindicated the spirituality of love, and its attraction to character. Where women know that it is by their hearts and souls that they are to keep the heart, they aspire to



be fit partners to their husbands, not merely elegant toys and voluptuous appendages.

2. AGAIN : undue credit has been claimed for Christianity as the foe and extirpator of slavery. Englishmen of the nineteenth century boldly denounce slavery as an immoral and abominable system. There may be a little fanaticism in the forms which this sometimes assumes ; but not one of the Christian apostles even opens his lips at all against slavery. Paul sent back the fugitive Onesimus to his master Philemon, with kind recommendations and apologies for the slave, but without a hint to the master that he ought to make him legally free. At this day, in consequence, the New Testament is the argumentative stronghold of those in the United States of America who are trying to keep up the accursed system. Indeed, for several centuries in which Christianity acted in the Roman empire, it developed no recorded and public opposition to slavery as an institution. The humanity of good Pagan emperors softened the harshness of the laws of bondage, and manumission was common ; but that slavery, as a system, is essentially immoral, no Christian of those days appears to have suspected. Yet it existed in its worst forms under Rome. Whole gangs of slaves were mere tools of capitalists, and were numbered like cattle, with no moral relationship to the owner : and young women of beautiful person were sold as articles of voluptuousness.

Zeal for the liberation of serfs in Europe first rose in the breasts of the clergy, after the whole population had become nominally Christian. It was not men, but Christians, that the clergy of the Middle Ages desired to make free. This was creditable, but not peculiar. Mohammedans also have a conscience against enslaving Mohammedans, and often bestow freedom on a slave as soon as he adopts their religion. Moreover, the desire of the kings to raise the chartered cities as an arm against their barons, was that which chiefly made rustic slavery untenable in its coarsest form, for a "villain" who escaped into the free cities could not be recovered. In later times, the first public act against slavery came from republican France, in the madness of atheistic enthusiasm, when she declared black and white men to be equally free, and liberated the negroes of Domingo. In Britain, the battle of social freedom has been fought chiefly by that religious sect which rests least on the letter of the Scripture; nor indeed will any wise advocate of black freedom deal much in quoting texts.

3. LASTLY: it is a lamentable fact, that not only do superstitions about Witches, Ghosts, Devils and Diabolical Miracles derive a strong support from the Bible, (and in fact have been exploded by nothing but the advance of physical philosophy,)—but what is far worse, the Bible alone has nowhere sufficed to establish an enlightened religious toleration. This is, at first, seemingly unintelligible: for the apostles certainly would have been intensely

shocked at the thought of punishing men, in body, purse or station, for not being Christians or not being orthodox. Nevertheless, not only does the Old Testament justify bloody persecution, but the New teaches that God will visit men with fiery vengeance *for holding an erroneous creed*;—that vengeance indeed is his, not ours; but that, still, the punishment is deserved. It would appear, that wherever this doctrine is held, possession of power for two or three generations inevitably converts men into persecutors; and in so far, we must lay the horrible desolations which Europe has suffered from bigotry, at the doors, not indeed of the Christian apostles themselves, but of that Bibliolatry which has converted their earliest records into a perfect and eternal law.

IV. "Prophecy" is generally regarded as a leading evidence of the divine origin of Christianity. But this also had proved itself to me a more and more mouldering prop, whether I leant on those which concerned Messiah, those of the New Testament, or the miscellaneous predictions of the Old Testament.

1. As to the Messianic prophecies, I began to be pressed with the difficulty of proving against the Jews that "Messiah was to suffer." The Psalms generally adduced for this purpose can in no way be fixed on Messiah. The prophecy in the 9th chapter of Daniel looks specious in the authorized English version, but has evaporated in the Greek translation and is not acknowledged in the best German renderings. I still rested on the 53rd

chapter of Isaiah, as alone fortifying me against the Rabbis: yet with an unpleasantly increasing perception that the system of "double interpretation" in which Christians indulge, is a playing fast and loose with prophecy, and is essentially dishonest. *No one dreams of a "second sense," until the primary sense proves false:* all false prophecy may be thus screened. The three prophecies quoted (Acts xiii. 33—35) in proof of the resurrection of Jesus, are simply puerile, and deserve no reply.—I felt there was something unsound in all this.

2. The prophecies of the New Testament are not many. First, we have that of Jesus in Matt. xxiv. concerning the destruction of Jerusalem. It is marvellously exact, down to the capture of the city and miserable enslavement of the population; but at this point it becomes clearly and hopelessly false: namely, it declares, that "*immediately after* that tribulation, the sun shall be darkened, &c., &c., and then shall appear the sign of the Son of Man in heaven, and then shall all the tribes of the earth mourn, and they shall see the Son of Man coming in the clouds of heaven with power and great glory. And he shall send his angels with a great sound of a trumpet, and they shall gather together his elect," &c. This is a manifest description of the Great Day of Judgment: and the prophecy goes on to add: "Verily I say unto you, This generation shall not pass, till all these things be fulfilled." When we thus find a prediction to break down suddenly



in the middle, we have the well known mark of its earlier part being written after the event: and it becomes unreasonable to doubt that the detailed annunciations of this 24th chapter of Matthew, were first composed *very soon after* the war of Titus, and never came from the lips of Jesus at all. Next: we have the prophecies of the Apocalypse. Not one of these can be interpreted certainly of any human affairs, except one in the 17th chapter, which the writer himself has explained to apply to the emperors of Rome: and that is proved false by the event.—Farther, we have Paul's prophecies concerning the apostacy of the Christian Church. These are very striking, as they indicate his deep insight into the moral tendencies of the community in which he moved. They are high testimonies to the prophetic soul of Paul; and as such, I cannot have any desire to weaken their force. But there is nothing in them to countenance the theory of supernaturalism, in the face of his great mistake as to the speedy return of Christ from heaven.

3. As for the Old Testament, if all its prophecies about Babylon and Tyre and Edom and Ishmael and the four Monarchies were both true and supernatural, what would this prove? That God had been pleased to reveal something of coming history to certain eminent men of Hebrew antiquity. That is all. We should receive this conclusion with an otiose faith. It could not order or authorize us to submit our souls and consciences to the obviously

defective morality of the Mosaic system in which these prophets lived ; and with Christianity it has nothing to do.

At the same time I had reached the conclusion that large deductions must be made from the credit of these old prophecies.

First, as to the Book of Daniel : the 11th chapter is closely historical down to Antiochus Epiphanes, after which it suddenly becomes false ; and according to different modern expositors, leaps away to Mark Antony, or to Napoleon Buonaparte, or to the Papacy. Hence we have a *primâ facie* presumption that the book was composed in the reign of that Antiochus : nor can it be proved to have existed earlier : nor is there in it one word of prophecy which can be shown to have been fulfilled in regard to any later era. Nay, the 7th chapter also is confuted by the event ; for the great Day of Judgment has not followed upon the fourth\* Monarchy.

Next, as to the prophecies of the Pentateuch. They abound, as to the times which precede the century of Hezekiah ; higher than which we cannot trace the Pentateuch†. No prophecy of the Penta-

\* The four monarchies in chapters 2 and 7 are the Babylonian, the Median, the Persian, the Macedonian. Interpreters however blend the Medes and Persians into one, and then pretend that the Roman empire is *still in existence*.

† The first apparent reference is by Micah (vi. 5) a contemporary of Hezekiah ; which proves that an account contained in our Book of Numbers was already familiar.

teuch can be proved to have been fulfilled, which had not been already fulfilled before Hezekiah's day.

Thirdly, as to the prophecies which concern various nations,—some of them are remarkably verified, as that against Babylon; others failed, as those of Ezekiel concerning Nebuchadnezzar's wars against Tyre and Egypt. The fate predicted against Babylon was delayed for five centuries, so as to lose all moral meaning as a divine infliction on the haughty city.—On the whole, it was clear to me, that it is a vain attempt to forge polemical weapons out of these old prophets, for the service of modern creeds\*.

V. My study of John's gospel had not enabled me to sustain Dr. Arnold's view, that it was an impregnable fortress of Christianity.

In discussing the Apocalypse, I had long before felt a doubt whether we ought not rather to assign that book to John the apostle in preference to the Gospel and Epistles: but this remained as only a doubt. The monotony also of the Gospel had often excited my *wonder*. But I was for the first time *offended*, on considering with a fresh mind an old fact,—the great similarity of the style and phraseology in the third chapter, in the testimony of the Baptist, as well as in Christ's address to Nicodemus, to that of John's own epistle. As the three first gospels have their family likeness, which enables us

\* I have had occasion to discuss most of the leading prophecies of the Old Testament in my "Hebrew Monarchy."

on hearing a text to know that it comes out of one of the three, though we perhaps know not which ; so is it with the Gospel and Epistles of John. When a verse is read, we know that it is either from an epistle of John, or else from the Jesus of John ; but often we cannot tell which. On contemplating the marked character of this phenomenon, I saw it infallibly to indicate that John has made both the Baptist and Jesus speak, as John himself would have spoken ; and that we cannot trust the historical reality of the discourses in the fourth gospel.

That narrative introduces an entirely new phraseology, with a perpetual discoursing about the Father and the Son ; of which there is barely the germ in Matthew ;—and herewith a new doctrine concerning the heaven-descended personality of Jesus. That the divinity of Christ cannot be proved from the three first gospels, was confessed by all the early Church, and is proved by the labouring arguments of the modern Trinitarians. What then can be clearer, than that John has put into the mouth of Jesus the doctrines of half a century later, which he desired to recommend ?

When this conclusion pressed itself first on my mind, the name of Strauss was only beginning to be known in England, and I did not read his great work until years after I had come to a final opinion on this whole subject. The contemptuous reprobation of Strauss in which it is fashionable for English writers to indulge, makes it a duty to express



my high sense of the lucid force, with which he unanswerably shows that the fourth gospel, (whoever the author was,) is no faithful exhibition of the discourses of Jesus. Before I had discerned this so vividly in all its parts, it had become quite certain to me that the secret colloquy with Nicodemus, and the splendid testimony of the Baptist to the Father and the Son, were wholly modelled out of John's own imagination. And no sooner had I felt how severe was the shock to John's general veracity, than a new and even graver difficulty rose upon me.

The stupendous and public event of Lazarus's resurrection,—the circumstantial crossexamination of the man born blind and healed by Jesus,—made those two miracles, in Dr. Arnold's view, splendid and unassailable bulwarks of Christianity. The more I considered them, the mightier their superiority seemed to those of the other gospels. They were wrought at Jerusalem, under the eyes of the rulers, who did their utmost to detect them, and could not; but in frenzied despair, plotted to kill Lazarus. How different from the frequently vague and wholesale statements of the other gospels concerning events which happened where no enemy was watching to expose delusion! many of them in distant and uncertain localities.

But it became the more needful to ask, How was it that the other writers omitted to tell of such decisive exhibitions? Were they so dull in logic, as not to discern the superiority of these? Can

they possibly have known of such miracles, wrought under the eyes of the Pharisees, and defying all their malice, and yet have told in preference other less convincing marvels? The question could not be long dwelt on, without eliciting the reply: "It is necessary to believe, at least until the contrary shall be proved, that the three first writers had either never heard of these two miracles, or disbelieved them." Thus the account rests on the unsupported evidence of John, with a weighty presumption against its truth.

When, where, and in what circumstances did John write? It is agreed, that he wrote fifty or sixty years after the events; when the other disciples were all dead; when Jerusalem was destroyed, her priests and learned men dispersed, her nationality dissolved, her coherence annihilated:—he wrote in a tongue foreign to the Jews of Palestine, and for a foreign people, in a distant country, and in the bosom of an admiring and confiding church, which was likely to venerate him the more, the greater marvels he asserted concerning their Master. He told them miracles of first-rate magnitude, which no one before had recorded. Is it possible for me to receive them *on his word*, under circumstances so conducive to delusion, and without a single check to ensure his veracity? Quite impossible; when I have already seen how little to be trusted is his report of the discourses and doctrine of Jesus.

Thus was I flung back to the three first gospels, as, with all their defects,—their genealogies, dreams,

visions, devilmiracles, and prophecies written after the event,—yet on the whole more faithful as a picture of the true Jesus, than that which is exhibited in John. And now my small root of supernaturalism clung the tighter to Paul, whose conversion still appeared to me a guarantee, that there was at least some nucleus of miracle in Christianity, although it had not pleased God to give us any very definite and trustworthy account. Clearly it was an error, to make miracles our *foundation*; but might we not hold them as a result? Doctrine must be our foundation; but perhaps we might believe the miracles for the sake of it.—And in the epistles of Paul I thought I saw various indications that he took this view.

But was it necessary to impute to John conscious and wilful deception? By no means absolutely necessary;—as appeared by the following train of thought. John tells us that Jesus promised the Comforter, *to bring to their memory* things that concerned him: oh that one could have the satisfaction of crossexamining John on this subject! Let me suppose him put into the witness box; and I will speak to him thus: “O aged Sir, we understand that you have two memories, a natural and a miraculous one: with the former you retain events as other men; with the latter you recall what had been totally forgotten. Be pleased to tell us now, Is it from your natural or from your supernatural memory that you derive your knowledge of the miracle wrought on Lazarus and the long discourses

which you narrate?" If to this question John were frankly to reply, "It is solely from my supernatural memory,—from the special action of the Comforter on my mind:" then should I discern that he was perfectly truehearted. Yet I should also see, that he was liable to mistake a reverie, a meditation, a daydream, for a resuscitation of his memory by the Spirit. In short, a writer who believes such a doctrine, and does not think it requisite to warn us how much of his tale comes from his natural, and how much from his supernatural memory, forfeits all claim to be received as a historian, witnessing by the common senses to external fact. His work may have religious value, but it is that of a novel or romance, not of a history. I therefore quite supersede to name the many other difficulties in detail which it contains.

VI. The apostolic logic was thus evidently untrustworthy. Still, I struggled to the last, to rest on the practical soundness of *Paul's* eminently sober understanding, which had appeared to me the more signal, the more I discerned the atmosphere of erroneous metaphysics which he necessarily breathed. But Paul also proved a broken reed, when I tried really to lean upon him as a main support.

1. The first thing that broke on me concerning Paul, was, that his moral sobriety of mind was no guarantee against his mistaking extravagancies for miracle. This was manifest to me in his treatment of *the gift of tongues*.

So long ago as in 1830, when the Irving



"miracles" commenced in Scotland, my particular attention had been turned to this subject, and the Irvingite exposition of the Pauline phenomena appeared to me so correct, that I was vehemently predisposed to believe the miraculous tongues. But my friend "the Irish clergyman" wrote me a full account of what he heard with his own ears; which was to the effect—that none of the sounds, vowels or consonants, were foreign;—that the strange words were moulded after the Latin grammar, ending in -abus, -obus, -ebat, -avi, &c., so as to denote poverty of invention rather than spiritual agency;—and *that there was no interpretation*. The last point decided me, that any belief which I had in it must be for the present unpractical. Soon after, a friend of mine applied by letter for information as to the facts to a very acute and pious Scotchman, who had become a believer in these miracles. The first reply gave us no facts whatever, but was a declamatory exhortation to believe. The second was nothing but a lamentation over my friend's unbelief, because he asked again for the facts. This showed me, that there was excitement and delusion: yet the general phenomena appeared so similar to those of the church of Corinth, that I supposed the persons must unawares have copied the exterior manifestations, if, after all, there was no reality at bottom.

Three years sufficed to explode these tongues; and from time to time I had an uneasy sense, how much discredit they cast on the Corinthian miracles.

Neander's discussion on the 2nd Chapter of the Acts first opened to me the certainty, that Luke (or the authority whom he followed) has exaggerated into a gift of languages what cannot have been essentially different from the Corinthian, and in short from the Irvingite, tongues. Thus Luke's narrative has transformed into a splendid miracle, what in Paul is no miracle at all. It is true that Paul speaks of *interpretation of tongues*, as possible, but without a hint that any verification was to be used. Besides, why should a Greek not speak Greek in an assembly of his own countrymen? Is it credible, that the Spirit should inspire one man to utter unintelligible sounds, and a second to interpret these, and then give the assembly endless trouble to find out whether the interpretation was pretence or reality, when the whole difficulty was gratuitous? We grant that there *may* be good reasons for what is paradoxical; but we need the stronger proof that it is a reality. Yet what in fact is there? and why should the gift of tongues in Corinth, as described by Paul, be treated with more respect than in Newman Street, London? I could find no other reply, than that Paul was too sober-minded: yet his own description of the tongues is that of a barbaric jargon, which makes the church appear as if it "were mad," and which is only redeemed from contempt by miraculous interpretation. In the Acts we see that this phenomenon pervaded all the Churches; from the day of Pentecost onward it was looked on as the standard

mark of "the descent of the Holy Spirit;" and in the conversion of Cornelius was the justification of Peter for admitting uncircumcised Gentiles: yet not once is "interpretation" alluded to, except in Paul's epistle. Paul could not go against the whole Church. He held a logic too much in common with the rest, to denounce the tongues as *mere* carnal excitement; but he does anxiously degrade them as of lowest spiritual value, and wholly prohibits them where there is "no interpreter." To carry out this rule, would perhaps have suppressed them entirely.

This however showed me, that I could not rest on Paul's practical wisdom, as securing him against speculative hallucinations in the matter of miracles: for indeed he says: "I thank my God, that I speak with tongues *more than ye all.*"

2. To another broad fact I had been astonishingly blind, though the truth of it flashed upon me as soon as I heard it named;—that Paul shows total unconcern to the human history and earthly teaching of Jesus, never quoting his doctrine or any detail of his actions. The Christ with whom Paul held communion was a risen, ascended, exalted Lord, a heavenly being, who reigned over arch-angels, and was about to appear as Judge of the world: but of Jesus in the flesh Paul seems to know nothing beyond the bare fact that he *did* "humble himself" to become man, and pleased not himself. Even in a controversy such as that about meat and drink, Paul omits to quote Christ's doctrine, "Not

that which goeth into the mouth defileth the man," &c. He surely therefore must have been wholly and contentedly ignorant of the oral teachings of Jesus.

3. This threw a new light on the *independent* position of Paul. That he anxiously refused to learn from the other apostles, and "conferred not with flesh and blood,"—"not having received his gospel of man, but by the revelation of Jesus Christ"—had seemed to me quite suitable to his high pretensions. Any novelties which might be in his doctrine, I had regarded as mere developments, growing out of the common stem, and guaranteed by the same Spirit. But I now saw that this independence invalidated his testimony. He may be to us a supernatural, but he certainly is not a natural, witness to the truth of Christ's miracles and personality. It avails not to talk of the *opportunities* which he had of searching into the truth of the resurrection of Christ, for we see that he did not choose to avail himself of the common methods of investigation. He learned his gospel *by an internal revelation*. He even recounts the appearance of Christ to him, years after his ascension, as evidence similar in kind to his appearance to Peter and to James, and to 500 brethren at once. Again the thought is forced on us,—how different was his logic from ours!

To see the full force of the last remark, we ought to conceive how many questions a Paley would have wished to ask of Paul; and how many details Paley himself, if *he* had had the sight, would have felt it



his duty to impart to his readers. Had Paul ever seen Jesus when alive? How did he recognize the miraculous apparition to be the person whom Pilate had crucified? Did he see him as a man in a fleshly body, or as a glorified heavenly form? Was it in waking, or sleeping; and if the latter, how did he distinguish his divine vision from a common dream? Did he see only, or did he also handle? If it was a palpable man of flesh, how did he assure himself that it was a person risen from the dead, and not an ordinary living man?

Now as Paul *is writing specially to convince the incredulous or to confirm the wavering*, it is certain that he would have dwelt on these details, if he had thought them of value to the argument. As he wholly suppresses them, we must infer that he held them to be immaterial; and therefore that the evidence with which he was satisfied, in proof that a man was risen from the dead, was either totally different in kind from that which we should now exact, or exceedingly inferior in rigour. It appears, that he believed in the resurrection of Christ, first, on the ground of prophecy: secondly, (is it harsh or bold to add?) on very loose and wholly unsifted testimony. For since he does not afford to us the means of sifting and analyzing his testimony, he cannot have judged it our duty so to do; and therefore is not likely himself to have sifted very narrowly the testimony of others.

Conceive farther how a Paley would have dealt with so astounding a fact, so crushing an argument,

as the appearance of the risen Jesus *to 500 brethren at once*. How would he have extravagated and revelled in proof! How would he have worked the topic, that "this could have been no dream, no internal impression, no vain fancy, but a solid indubitable fact!" How he would have quoted his authorities, detailed their testimonies, and given their names and characters! Yet Paul dispatches the affair in one line, gives no details and no special declarations, and seems to see no greater weight in this decisive appearance, than in the vision to his single self. He expects us to take his very vague announcement of the 500 brethren as enough, and it does not seem to occur to him that his readers (if they need to be convinced) are entitled to expect fuller information. Thus if Paul does not intentionally supersede human testimony, he reduces it to its minimum of importance.

How can I believe *at second hand*, from the word of one whom I discern to hold so lax notions of evidence? Yet *who* of the Christian teachers was superior to Paul? He is regarded as almost the only educated man of the leaders. Of his activity of mind, his moral sobriety, his practical talents, his profound sincerity, his enthusiastic selfdevotion, his spiritual insight, there is no question: but when his logic is infected with the errors of his age, what else can we expect of the eleven, and of the multitude?

4. Paul's neglect of the earthly teaching of Jesus might in part be imputed to the nonexistence of

written documents and the great difficulty of learning with certainty what he really had taught.—This agreed perfectly well with what I already saw of the untrustworthiness of our gospels; but it opened a chasm between the doctrine of Jesus and that of Paul, and showed that Paulinism, however good in itself, is not assuredly to be identified with primitive Christianity. Moreover, it became clear, why James and Paul are so contrasted. James retains with little change the traditionary doctrine of the Jerusalem Christians; Paul has superadded or substituted a gospel of his own. This was, I believe, pointedly maintained 25 years ago by the author of “Not Paul, but Jesus;” a book which I have never read.

VII. I had now to ask,—Where are *the twelve men* of whom Paley talks, as testifying to the Resurrection of Christ? Paul cannot be quoted as a witness, but only as a believer. Of the twelve we do not even know the names, much less have their testimony. Of James and Jude there are two epistles, but it is doubtful whether these are two of the twelve apostles; and neither of them declare themselves eyewitnesses to Christ’s resurrection. In short, Peter and John are the only two. Of these however, Peter does not attest the *bodily*, but only the *spiritual*, resurrection of Jesus; for he says that Christ was “put to death in flesh, but made alive in spirit,” 1 Pet. iii. 18: yet if this verse had been lost, his opening address (i. 3) would have seduced me into the belief that Peter taught the

bodily resurrection of Jesus. So dangerous is it to believe miracles, on the authority of words quoted from a man whom we cannot cross-examine! Thus, once more, John is left alone in his testimony; and how insufficient that is, has been said.

The question also arose, whether Peter's testimony to the transfiguration (2 Pet. i. 18), was an important support. A first objection might be drawn from the sleep ascribed to the three disciples in the gospels; if the narrative were at all trustworthy. But a second and greater difficulty rises in the doubtful authenticity of the second Epistle of Peter.

Neander positively decides against that epistle. Among many reasons, the similarity of its second chapter to that of Jude is a cardinal fact. Jude is supposed to be original: yet his allusions show him to be post-apostolic. If so, the second Epistle of Peter is clearly spurious.—Whether this was certain, I could not make up my mind: but it was manifest that where such doubts may be honestly entertained, no basis exists to found a belief of a great and significant miracle.

On the other hand, both the Transfiguration itself, and the fiery destruction of Heaven and Earth prophesied in the third chapter of this epistle, are open to objections so serious, as mythical imaginations, that the name of Peter will hardly guarantee them to those with whom the general evidence for the miracles in the gospels has thoroughly broken down.



On the whole, one thing only was clear concerning Peter's faith;—that he, like Paul, was satisfied with a kind of evidence for the resurrection of Jesus which fell exceedingly short of the demands of modern logic : and that it is absurd in us to believe, barely *because* they believed.

## SIXTH PERIOD :

## HISTORY DISCOVERED TO BE NO PART OF RELIGION.

AFTER renouncing any "Canon of Scripture" or Sacred Letter at the end of my fourth period, I had been forced to abandon all "Secondhand Faith" by the end of my fifth. If asked *why* I believed this or that, I could no longer say, "*Because* Peter or Paul or John believed; and I do not think they could mistake." The question now pressed hard, whether this was equivalent to renouncing Christianity.

Undoubtedly my positive belief in its miracles had evaporated; but I had not arrived at a positive *disbelief*. I still felt the actual benefits and excellencies of this religion (oh how contrasted to Paganism!) too remarkable a phenomenon to be scorned for defect of proof. In Morals likewise it happens, that the ablest practical expounders of truth may make strange blunders as to the foundations and ground of belief: why was this impossible as to the apostles? Meanwhile, it did begin to appear to myself remarkable;—that I continued to love and have pleasure in so much that I certainly disbelieved. I perused a chapter of Paul or of Luke, or some verses of a hymn, and although they appeared to me to abound with error, I found

satisfaction and profit in them. Why was this? was it all fond prejudice,—an absurd clinging to old associations?

A little self-examination enabled me to reply, that it was no ill-grounded feeling or ghost of past opinions; but that my religion always had been, and still was, *a state of sentiment* toward God, far less dependent on articles of a creed, than once I had unhesitatingly believed. The Bible is pervaded by a sentiment, which is implied everywhere,—viz. *the intimate sympathy of the Pure and Perfect God with the heart of each faithful worshipper*. This is that which is wanting in Greek philosophers, English Deists, German Pantheists, and all formalists. This is that which so often edifies me in Christian writers and speakers, when I ever so much disbelieve the letter of their sentences. Accordingly, though I saw more and more of moral and spiritual imperfection in the Bible, I by no means ceased to regard it as a quarry whence I might dig precious metal, though the ore needed a refining analysis: and I regarded this as the truest essence and most vital point in Christianity,—to sympathize with the great souls from whom its spiritual eminence has flowed;—to love, to hope, to rejoice, to trust with them;—and *not*, to form the same interpretations of an ancient book and to take the same views of critical argument.

My historical conception of Jesus had so gradually melted into dimness, that he had receded out of my practical religion, I knew not exactly

when. I believe that I must have disused any distinct prayers to him, from a growing opinion that he ought not to be the *object* of worship, but only the *way* by whom we approach to the Father; and as in fact we need no such "way" at all, this was (in the result) a change from practical Ditheism to pure Theism. His "mediation" was to me always a mere name, and, as I believe, would otherwise have been mischievous\*.—Simultaneously a great uncertainty had grown on me, how much of the discourses put into the mouth of Jesus was really uttered by him; so that I had in no small measure to form him anew to my imagination.

But if religion is addressed to, and must be judged by, our moral faculties, how could I believe in that painful and gratuitous imagination,—The Devil?—He also had become a waning phantom to me, perhaps from the time that I saw the demoniacal miracles to be fictions, and still more when proofs of manifold mistake in the New Testament rose on me. This however took a solid form of positive *disbelief*, when I investigated the history of the doctrine,—I forget exactly in what stage. For it is manifest, that the old Hebrews believed only in evil spirits sent *by God* to do *his bidding*, and had no idea of a rebellious Spirit that rivalled God. That idea was first imbibed in the Babylonish captivity, and apparently therefore must have been adopted from the Persian Ahriman or

\* I do not here enlarge on this, as it is discussed in my treatise on The Soul; 2nd edition, p. 76.



from the "Melek Taous," the Sheitan still honoured by the Yezidi with mysterious fear. That *the serpent* in the early part of Genesis denoted the same Satan, is probable enough; but this only goes to show that that narrative is a legend imported from farther East; since it is certain that the subsequent Hebrew literature has no trace of such an Ahriman. The Book of Tobit and its demon show how wise in these matters the exiles in Nineveh were beginning to be. The Book of Daniel manifests, that by the time of Antiochus Epiphanes the Jews had learned each nation to have its guardian spirit, good or evil; and that the fates of nations depend on the invisible conflict of these tutelary powers. In Paul the same idea is strongly brought out. Satan is the prince of the power of the air; with principalities and powers beneath him; over all of whom Christ won the victory on his cross. In the Apocalypse we read the Oriental doctrine of the "*seven angels* who stand before God." As the Christian tenet thus rose among the Jews from their contact with Eastern superstition, and was propagated and expanded while prophecy was mute, it cannot be ascribed to "divine revelation" as the source. The ground of it is clearly seen in infant-speculations on the cause of moral evil and of national calamities.

Christ and the Devil had thus faded away out of my spiritual vision; there were left the more vividly, God and Man. Yet I had not finally renounced the *possibility*, that Jesus might have had a divine

mission to stimulate all our spiritual faculties and to guarantee to us a future state of existence. The abstract arguments for the immortality of the soul had always appeared to me vain trifling; and I was deeply convinced that nothing could *assure* us of a future state but a divine communication. In what mode this might be made, I could not say *à priori*: might not this really be the great purport of Messiahship? was not this, if any, a worthy ground for a divine interference? On the contrary, to heal the sick, did not seem at all an adequate motive for a miracle; else, why not the sick of our own day? Credulity had exaggerated, and had represented Jesus to have wrought miracles: but that did not wholly *disprove* the miracle of resurrection (whether bodily or of whatever kind) said to have been wrought by God *upon* him, and of which so very intense a belief so remarkably propagated itself. Paul indeed believed it from prophecy; (1 Cor. xv. 3.) and, as we see this to be a delusion, resting on Rabbinical interpretations, we may perhaps *account* thus for the belief of the early church, without in any way admitting the fact.—Here however, I found I had the clue to my only remaining discussion, the primitive Jewish controversy. Let us step back to an earlier stage than John or Paul or Peter's doctrine. We cannot doubt that Jesus claimed to be Messiah: what then was Messiah to be? and, did Jesus (though misrepresented by his disciples) truly fulfil his own claims?

---

The really Messianic prophecies appeared to me to be far fewer than is commonly supposed. I found such in the 9th and 11th of Isaiah, the 5th of Micah, the 9th of Zechariah, in the 72nd Psalm, in the 37th of Ezekiel, and as I supposed, in the 50th and 53rd of Isaiah. To these nothing of moment could be certainly added; for the passage in Dan. ix. is illtranslated in the English version, and I had already concluded that the Book of Daniel is a spurious fabrication. From Micah and Ezekiel it appeared, that Messiah was to come from Bethlehem and either be David himself, or a spiritual David: from Isaiah it is shown that he is a rod out of the stem of Jesse.—It is true, I found no proof that Jesus did come from Bethlehem or from the stock of David; for the tales in Matthew and Luke refute one another, and have clearly been generated by a desire to verify the prophecy. But genealogies for or against Messiahship seemed to me a mean argument; and the fact of the prophets demanding a carnal descent in Messiah struck me as a worse objection than that Jesus had not got it,—if this could be ever proved. The Messiah of Micah however was not Jesus; for he was to deliver Israel from *the Assyrians*, and his whole description is literally warlike. Micah, writing when the name of Sennacherib was terrible, conceived of a powerful monarch on the throne of David who was to subdue him: but as this prophecy was not verified, the imaginary object of it was looked for as “Messiah” even after the disappearance of the formidable

Assyrian power. This undeniable emptiness of Micah's prophecy extends itself also to that in the 9th chapter of his contemporary Isaiah,—if indeed that splendid passage did not really point at the child Hezekiah. Waiving this doubt, it is at any rate clear that the marvellous child on the throne of David was to break the yoke of the oppressive Assyrian with a battle of confused noise, and garments rolled in blood, with burning and fuel of fire. This has nothing at all to do with Jesus.

In the 37th of Ezekiel the (new) David is to gather Judah and Israel “from the heathen whither they be gone” and to “make them one nation *in the land, on the mountains of Israel:*” and Jehovah adds, that they shall “dwell in the land *which I gave unto Jacob my servant, wherein your fathers dwelt:* and they shall dwell therein, they and their children and their children's children for ever: and my servant David shall be their prince for ever.” It is trifling to pretend that *the land promised to Jacob, and in which the old Jews dwelt*, was a spiritual, and not the literal Palestine; and therefore it is impossible to make out that Jesus has fulfilled any part of this representation. The description however that follows (Ezekiel xl. &c.) of the new city and temple, with the sacrifices offered by “the priests the Levites, of the seed of Zadok,” and the gate of the sanctuary for the prince (xliv. 3), and his elaborate account of the borders of the land (xlviii. 13–23), place the earnestness of Ezekiel's literalism in still clearer light.



The 72nd Psalm, by the splendour of its predictions concerning the grandeur of some future king of Judah, earns the title of Messianic, *because* it was never fulfilled by any historical king. But it is equally certain, that it has had no appreciable fulfilment in Jesus.

But what of the 11th of Isaiah? Its portraiture is not so much that of a king, as of a prophet endowed with superhuman power. "He shall smite the earth with the rod of his mouth, and with the breath of his lips he shall slay the wicked." A Paradisiacal state is to follow.—This general description *may* be verified by Jesus, *hereafter*; but we have no manifestation, which enables us to call the fulfilment a fact. Indeed, the latter part of the prophecy is out of place, even for a time so late as the reign of Augustus; which forcibly denotes that Isaiah was predicting only that for which his spirit longed: for in this great day of Messiah, Jehovah is to gather back his dispersed people from Assyria, Egypt, and other parts; he is *to reconcile Judah and Ephraim*, (who had been perfectly reconciled centuries before Jesus was born,) and as a result of this Messianic glory, the people of Israel "shall fly upon the shoulders of the *Philistines* towards the west; they shall spoil them of the east together: they shall lay their hand on *Edom* and *Moab*, and the children of *Ammon* shall obey them." But Philistines, Moab and Ammon, were distinctions entirely lost before the Christian era.—Finally, the Red Sea is to be once more passed miraculously by

the Israelites, returning (as would seem) to their fathers' soil. Take all these particulars together, and the prophecy is neither fulfilled in the past nor possible to be fulfilled in the future.

The prophecy which we know as Zechariah ix.-xi. is agreed to be really from a prophet of unknown name, contemporaneous with Isaiah. It was written while Ephraim was still a people, *i. e.* before the capture of Samaria by Shalmanezar; and xi. 1-3 appears to howl over the recent devastations of Tiglathpilezer. The prophecy is throughout full of the politics of that day. No part of it has the most remote or imaginable similarity to the historical life of Jesus, except that he once rode into Jerusalem on an ass; a deed which cannot have been peculiar to him, and which Jesus moreover appears to have planned with the express purpose of assimilating himself to the lowly king here described. Yet such an isolated act is surely a carnal and beggarly fulfilment. To ride on an ass is no mark of humility in those who must ordinarily go on foot. The prophet clearly means that the righteous king is not to ride on a warhorse and trust in cavalry, as Solomon and the Egyptians, (see Ps. xx. 7. Is. xxxi. 1-3, xxx. 16,) but is to imitate the lowliness of David and the old judges, who rode on young asses; and is to be a lover of peace.

Chapters 50 and 53 of the pseudo-Isaiah remained; which contain many phrases so aptly descriptive of the sufferings of Christ, and so closely knit up with our earliest devotional associations,

that they were the very last link of my chain that snapt. Still, I could not conceal from myself, that no exactness in this prophecy, however singular, could avail to make out that Jesus was the Messiah of Hezekiah's prophets. There must be *some* explanation; and if I did not see it, that must probably arise from prejudice and habit.—In order therefore to gain freshness, I resolved to peruse the entire prophecy of the pseudo-Isaiah in Lowth's version, from ch. xl. onward, at a single sitting.

This prophet writes from Babylon, and has his vision full of the approaching restoration of his people by Cyrus, whom he addresses by name. In ch. xlii. he introduces to us an eminent and "chosen servant of God," whom he invests with all the evangelical virtues, and declares that he is to be a light to the Gentiles. In ch. xlv. (v. 1—also v. 21) he is named as "*Jacob* my servant, and *Israel* whom I have chosen." The appellations recur in xlv. 4: and in a far more striking passage, xlix. 1-12, which is eminently Messianic to the Christian ear, *except* that in v. 3, the speaker distinctly declares himself to be (not Messiah, but) Israel. The same speaker continues in ch. l., which is equally Messianic. In ch. lii. the prophet speaks *of* him, (vv. 13-15) but the subject of the chapter is *restoration from Babylon*; and from this he runs on into the celebrated ch. liii.

It is essential to understand the *same* "elect servant" all along. He is many times called Israel, and is often addressed in a tone quite inapplicable

to Messiah, viz. as one needing salvation himself; so in ch. xliii. Yet in ch. xlix. this elect Israel is distinguished from Jacob and Israel at large: thus there is an entanglement. Who can be called on to risk his eternal hopes on his skilful unknotting of it? It appeared however to me most probable, that as our high Churchmen distinguish "mother Church" from the individuals who compose the Church, so the "Israel" of this prophecy is the idealizing of the Jewish Church; and such, I understand, is a current Jewish interpretation. The figure perhaps embarrasses us, only because of the male sex attributed to the ideal servant of God; for when "Zion" is spoken of by the same prophet in the same way, no one finds difficulty, or imagines that a human female of superhuman birth and qualities must be intended.

It still remained strange that in Isaiah liii. and Pss. xxii. and lxix. there should be *coincidences* so close with the sufferings of Jesus: but I reflected, that I had no proof that the narrative had not been strained by credulity, to bring it into artificial agreement with these imagined predictions of his death. And herewith my last argument in favour of views for which I once would have laid down my life, seemed to be spent.

Nor only so: but I now reflected that the falsity of the prophecy in Dan. vii. (where the coming of "a Son of Man" to sit in universal judgment follows immediately upon the break-up of the Syrian monarchy,)—to say nothing of the general proof of



the spuriousness of the whole Book of Daniel,—ought long ago to have been seen by me as of more cardinal importance. For if we believe any thing at all about the discourses of Christ, we cannot doubt that he selected "*Son of Man*" as his favourite title; which is a direct annunciation to us that he based all his pretensions on the seventh chapter of Daniel, from which that title is adopted. On the whole then, it was no longer defect of proof which presented itself, but positive disproof of the primitive and fundamental claim.

I could not for a moment allow weight to the topic, that "it is dangerous to *disbelieve* wrongly;" for I felt, and had always felt, that it gave a premium to the most boastful and tyrannizing superstition:—as if it were not equally dangerous to *believe* wrongly! Nevertheless, I tried to plead for farther delay, by asking: Is not the subject too vast for me to decide upon?—Think how many wise and good men have fully examined, and have come to a contrary conclusion. What a grasp of knowledge and experience of the human mind it requires! Perhaps too I have unawares been carried away by a love of novelty, which I have mistaken for a love of truth.

But the argument recoiled upon me. Have I not been 25 years a reader of the Bible? have I not full 18 years been a student of Theology? have I not employed 7 of the best years of my life, with ample leisure, in this very investigation;—without any intelligible earthly bribe to carry me to my

present conclusion, against all my interests, all my prejudices and all my education? There are many far more learned men than I,—many men of greater power of mind; but there are also a hundred times as many who are my inferiors: and if I have been seven years labouring in vain to solve this vast literary problem, it is an extreme absurdity to imagine that the solving of it is imposed by God on the whole human race. Let me renounce my little learning; let me be as the poor and simple: what then follows? Why, then, *still the same thing follows*, that as I cannot solve literary problems concerning distant history, they can form no part of my religion.

It is with hundreds or thousands a favourite idea, that “they have an inward witness of the truth of (*the historical and outward facts of*) Christianity.” Perhaps the statement would bring its own refutation to them, if they would express it clearly. Suppose a biographer of Sir Isaac Newton, after narrating his sublime discoveries and ably stating some of his most remarkable doctrines, to add, that Sir Isaac was a great magician, and had been used to raise spirits by his arts, and finally was himself carried up to heaven one night, while he was gazing at the moon; and that this event had been foretold by Merlin:—it would surely be the height of absurdity to dilate on the truth of the Newtonian theory as “the moral evidence” of the truth of the miracles and prophecy. Yet this is what those do, who adduce the excel-

lence of the precepts and spirituality of the general doctrine of the New Testament, as the "moral evidence" of its miracles and of its fulfilling the Messianic prophecies. But for the ambiguity of the word *doctrine*, probably such confusion of thought would have been impossible. "Doctrines" are either spiritual truths, or are statements of external history. Of the former we may have an inward witness;—that is their proper evidence;—but the latter must depend upon adequate testimony and logical criticism.

---

How quickly might I have come to my conclusion,—how much weary thought and useless labour might I have spared,—if at an earlier time this simple truth had been pressed upon me, that since the religious faculties of the poor and halfeducated cannot investigate Historical and Literary questions, *therefore* these questions cannot constitute an essential part of Religion.—But perhaps I could not have gained this result by any abstract act of thought, from want of freedom to think: and there are advantages also in expanding slowly under great pressure, if one *can* expand, and is not crushed by it.

I felt no convulsion of mind, no emptiness of soul, no inward practical change: but I knew that it would be said, this was only because the force of

the old influence was as yet unspent, and that a gradual declension in the vitality of my religion must ensue. More than eight years have since past, and I feel I have now a right to contradict that statement. To any "Evangelical" I have a right to say, that while he has a *single*, I have a *double* experience; and I know, that the spiritual fruits which he values have no connection whatever with the complicated and elaborate creed, which his school imagines to be the roots out of which they are fed. That they depend directly on *the heart's belief in the sympathy of God with individual man*, I am well assured: but that doctrine does not rest upon the Bible or upon Christianity; for it is a postulate, from which every Christian advocate is forced to start. If it be denied, he cannot take a step forward in his argument. He talks to men about Sin and Judgment to come, and the need of Salvation, and so proceeds to the Saviour. But his very first step,—the idea of Sin,—*assumes* that God concerns himself with our actions, words, thoughts; *assumes* therefore that sympathy of God with man, which (it seems) can only be known by an infallible Bible.

I know that many Evangelicals will reply, that I never can have had "the true" faith; else I could never have lost it: and as for my not being conscious of spiritual change, they will accept this as confirming their assertion. Undoubtedly I cannot prove that I ever felt as they now feel. Perhaps they love their present opinions *more than* truth,



and are careless to examine and verify them: with that, I claim no fellowship. But there are Christians of another stamp, who love their creed, *only* because they believe it to be true, but love truth, as such, and truthfulness, more than any creed: with these I claim fellowship. Their love to God and man, their allegiance to righteousness and true holiness, will not be in suspense and liable to be overturned by new discoveries in geology and in ancient inscriptions, or by improved criticism of texts and of history, nor have they any imaginable interest in thwarting the advance of scholarship. It is strange indeed to undervalue *that* Faith, which alone is purely moral and spiritual, alone rests on a basis that cannot be shaken, alone lifts the possessor above the conflicts of erudition, and makes it impossible for him to fear the increase of knowledge.

At the same time, I confess to several moral changes, as the result of this change in my creed, the principal of which are the following.

1. I have found that my old belief narrowed my affections.

It taught me to bestow peculiar love on "the people of God," and it assigned an intellectual creed as one essential mark of this people. That creed may be made more or less stringent; but when driven to its minimum, it includes a recognition of the historical proposition, that "the Jewish teacher Jesus fulfilled the conditions requisite to constitute him the Messiah of the ancient Hebrew prophets." This proposition has been rejected by very many

thoughtful and sincere men in England, and by tens of thousands in France, Germany, Italy, Spain. To judge rightly about it, is necessarily a problem of literary criticism; which has both to interpret the Old Scriptures and to establish how much of the biography of Jesus in the New is credible. To judge wrongly about it, may prove one to be a bad critic, but not a less good and less pious man. Yet my old creed enacted an affirmative result of this historical inquiry, as a test of one's spiritual state, and ordered me to think harshly of men like Marcus Aurelius and Lessing, because they did not adopt the conclusion which the professedly uncritical have established. It possessed me with a general gloom concerning Mohammedans and Pagans, and involved the whole course of history and prospects of futurity in a painful darkness from which I am relieved.

2. Its theory was one of selfishness. That is, it inculcated that my first business must be, to save my soul from future punishment, and to attain future happiness; and it bade me to chide myself, when I thought of nothing but about doing present duty and blessing God for present enjoyment.

In point of fact, I never did look much to futurity, nor even in prospect of death could attain to any vivid anticipations or desires, much less was troubled with fears. The evil which I suffered from my theory, was not (I believe) that it really made me selfish—other influences of it were too powerful:—but it taught me to blame myself for unbelief, because I was not sufficiently absorbed in the contemplation of my vast personal expectations. I cer-

tainly here feel myself delivered from the danger of factitious sin.

The selfish and selfrighteous texts come principally from the three first gospels, and are greatly counteracted by the deeper spirituality of the apostolic epistles. I therefore by no means charge this tendency indiscriminately on the New Testament.

3. It laid down that "the time is short; the Lord is at hand: the things of this world pass away, and deserve not our affections: the only thing worth spending one's energies on, is, the forwarding of men's salvation." It bade me "watch perpetually, not knowing whether my Lord would return at cockerowing or at midday."

While I believed this, I acted an eccentric and unprofitable part. From it I was saved against my will, and forced into a course in which the doctrine, having been laid to sleep, awoke only now and then to reproach and harass me for my unfaithfulness to it. This doctrine it is, which makes so many spiritual persons lend active or passive aid to uphold abuses and perpetuate mischief in every department of human life. Those who stick closest to the Scripture do not shrink from saying, that "it is not worth while trying to mend the world," and stigmatize as "political and worldly" such as pursue an opposite course. Undoubtedly, if we are to expect our Master at cockerowing, we shall not study the permanent improvement of this transitory scene. To teach the certain speedy destruction of earthly things, as the New Testament does, is to

cut the sinews of all earthly progress ; to declare war against Intellect and Imagination, against Industrial and Social advancement.

There was a time when I was distressed at being unable to avoid exultation in the worldly greatness of England. My heart would, in spite of me, swell with something of pride, when a Turk or Arab asked what was my country : I then used to confess to God this pride as a sin. I still see that that was a legitimate deduction from the Scripture. "The glory of this world passeth away," and I had professed to be "dead with Christ" to it. The difference is this. I am now as "dead" as then to all of it which my conscience discerns to be sinful, but I have not to torment myself in a (fundamentally ascetic) struggle against innocent and healthy impulses. I now, with deliberate approval, "love the world and the things of the world." I can feel patriotism, and take the deepest interest in the future prospects of nations, and no longer reproach myself. Yet this is quite consistent with feeling the spiritual interests of men to be of all incomparably the highest.

4. I am sensible how heavy a clog on the exercise of my judgment has been taken off from me, since I unlearned that Bibliolatry, which I am disposed to call the greatest religious evil of England.

Authority has a place in religious teaching, as in education, but it is provisional and transitory. Its chief use is to guide *action*, and assist the formation of habits, before the judgment is ripe. As



applied to mere *opinion*, its sole function is to guide inquiry. So long as an opinion is received on authority only, it works no inward process upon us: yet the promulgation of it by authority, is not therefore always useless, since the prominence thus given to it may be a most important stimulus to thought. While the mind is inactive or weak, it will not wish to throw off the yoke of authority. But as soon as it begins to discern error in the standard proposed to it, we have the mark of incipient original thought, which is the thing so valuable and so difficult to elicit; and which authority is apt to crush. An intelligent pupil seldom or never gives *too little* weight to the opinion of his teacher: a wise teacher will never repress the free action of his pupils' minds, even when they begin to question his results. "Forbidding to think" is a still more fatal tyranny than "forbidding to marry:" it paralyzes all the moral powers.

In former days, if any moral question came before me, I instantly turned it into the mere lawyerlike exercise of searching and interpreting my written code. Thus, in reading how Henry the Eighth treated his first queen, I thought over Scripture texts in order to judge whether he was right, and if I could so get a solution, I left my own moral powers unexercised. All Protestants see, how mischievous it is to a Romanist lady to have a directing priest, whom she every day consults about every thing; so as to lay her own judgment to sleep. We readily understand, that in the extreme case

such a woman may gradually lose all perception of right and wrong, and become a mere machine in the hands of her director. But the Protestant principle of accepting the Bible as the absolute law, acts towards the same end; and only fails of doing the same amount of mischief, because a book can never so completely answer all the questions asked of it, as a living priest can. The Protestantism which forbids us to trust our moral faculties, and pities those as "without chart and compass" who acknowledge no infallible written code, can mean nothing else, than that "the less occasion we have to trust our moral powers, the better;" that is, it represents it as of all things most desirable to be able to benumb conscience by disuse, under the guidance of a mind from without. Those who teach this, need not marvel to see their pupils become Romanists.

But Bibliolatry not only paralyzes the moral sense; it also corrupts the intellect, and introduces a crooked logic, by setting men to the duty of extracting absolute harmony out of discordant materials. All are familiar with the subtlety of lawyers, whose task it is to elicit a single sense out of a heap of contradictory statutes. In their case such subtlety may indeed excite in us impatience or contempt; but we forbear to condemn them, when it is pleaded that practical convenience, not truth, is their avowed end. In the case of theological ingenuity, where truth is the professed and sacred object, a graver judgment is called for. When the

Biblical interpreter struggles to reconcile contradictions or to prove that wrong is right, merely because he is bound to maintain the perfection of the Bible;—when to this end he condescends to sophistry and pettifogging evasions;—it is difficult to avoid feeling disgust as well as grief. Some good people are secretly conscious that the Bible is not an infallible book; but they dread the consequences of proclaiming this “to the vulgar.” Alas! and have they measured the evils which the fostering of this lie is producing in the minds, not of the educated only, but emphatically of the ministers of religion?

Many who call themselves Christian preachers busily undermine moral sentiment, by telling their hearers, that if they do not believe the Bible (or the Church), they can have no firm religion or morality, and will have no reason to give against following brutal appetite. This doctrine it is, that so often makes men atheists in Spain, and profligates in England, as soon as they unlearn the national creed: and the school which have done the mischief, moralize over the wickedness of human nature when it comes to pass, instead of blaming the falsehood which they have themselves inculcated.

---

After my search was thus concluded, I fell in with a new doctrine among Unitarians, (with some of whom I am proud to confess a warm friendship,)

—that the Evidence of Christianity is essentially popular and spiritual, consisting *in the Life of Christ*, who is a perfect man and the absolute moral image of God. As far as I was able to translate this, it seemed to mean, that the four gospels set before us a picture so divine, that every ignorant man's common sense (if he has but spiritual feeling) will tell him that it *could* not have been invented by the historians; and that on the evidence of this divine life we pronounce Jesus to be a pattern of absolute perfection, "God manifest in the flesh,"—and accordingly, bow in reverence to that *all-but* superhuman man, and acknowledge him as the Head of the human race, the great and unsurpassable Teacher.

Some of the men who maintain this, are no common Christians, but original thinkers, as well as in various ways deserving of high deference. I was unable to deny to myself, that my primitive training had been too much logical and too little moral. Perhaps my moral powers were still in partial paralysis: it was proper to consider this new view maturely. What if Christians were guided rightly by a spiritual instinct, but had injured their good cause by unskilful advocacy?

Nevertheless, on coming more closely to the question, I did not find that such a train of thought could recommend itself to me for a moment: and that, for many decisive reasons.

1. I do not at all see how the uneducated can judge on the literary question, "whether it is, or is



not, possible for the portrait of Jesus to be imaginary and unreal." Heroes are described in superhuman dignity: why not in superhuman goodness? Many biographies overdraw the virtue of their subject. An experienced critic can sometimes discern this; but certainly the uncritical cannot always. I remember, when a boy, to have read the life of Fletcher of Madeley, written by Benson; and he appeared to me an absolutely perfect man: and at this day, if I were to read the book afresh, I suspect I should think his character a more perfect one than that of Jesus.—Hence this view does not get rid of the objection, that Religion must not be made a problem of Literature.

2. I am either to criticize, or not to criticize, the character of Jesus, by the received laws of human morality. *If I am not*, then I have no ground for praising or admiring him: indeed, if in reality he was only a rather ordinary good man, I then shall not discover that this is all. But *if I am* to criticize him, by the common standard of right and wrong, I find myself driven to conclude that his alledged "perfection" is wholly imaginary. It is with Perfection, as with the Infallibility of the Church of Rome: to fail in one point, however small, is to fail altogether. Moreover, he who claims perfection for another, forces us to severe criticism. If Benson had announced the absolute perfection of the excellent and noble Fletcher, and *on this ground* had claimed of us all to bow to Fletcher as the Head of the human family, our Lord and our Sa-

viour,—those who had never before heard Fletcher's name would have been stirred up to “pick holes” (as the saying is) in that admirable person; and if charged with the offence of seeking spots in the sun, they would reply that the fault was his, who advanced for Fletcher such preposterous claims.

It is an exceedingly ungracious thing to have to point out faults in an eminent man; and leads to the most unjust inference that the censor thinks himself superior. Those who have been accustomed to do nothing but admire, are always pained and often exasperated by the voice of censure. It is not fair to ask, (as some whom I exceedingly respect do ask,) that those who do not admit Jesus to be faultless and the very image of God, will specify and establish his faults. This is to demand that we will *presume* him to be perfect, until we find him to be imperfect. Such a presumption is natural with those who accept him as an angelic being; absurd in one who regards him as a genuine man, with no preternatural origin and power. If by sensible and physical proof the orthodox can show that he is God incarnate, it will be reasonable to assume that he is a perfect specimen of moral excellence, and after this, it will be difficult to criticize. But when sensible proof of his immaculate conception and of his Godhead is allowed not to exist, and maintained to be abstractedly impossible, I have no words to express my wonder at that logic, which starts by acknowledging and establishing his simple manhood, proceeds to *presume* his absolute moral

perfection, *throws on others the task of disproving the presumption*, and regards their silence as a verification that he is God manifest in the flesh. If on the contrary we are to presume every man to be imperfect until he is proved to be perfect, it is certain that the presumption will never be set aside in any single case.

3. There would be something intensely absurd in accepting Jesus as the Messiah, and refusing to acknowledge him as the *authoritative teacher*, to whose wisdom we must pay perpetual unlimited unhesitating homage. If any thing is certain about the claims to Messiahship preferred by Jesus, it is, that they implied his superhuman wisdom, and the duty of all to sit at his feet uncriticizingly. Not merely can we quote special texts, as, "Ye call me Teacher and Lord; and ye say well! for so I am:"—"Be not ye called *Rabbi* [or teacher], for ONE is your Teacher, even Christ; and all ye are brethren:"—but we find his whole discourses pervaded by this tone, implying even more than it states. We are to become little children, take his yoke on us, and learn of him. He is ready to answer off-hand all difficult questions, critical and lawyerlike, as well as moral. If we strip off (as superadded by later credulity) his claim of homage and subjection, we leave nothing of his Messiahship but a name.

Yet against admitting this claim there are various insuperable obstacles. *First*, it is an unpalatable opinion that God would go out of his way, to give us any thing so undesirable, as an authoritative

Oracle would be;—which would paralyze our moral powers, exactly as an infallible church does, in the very proportion in which we succeeded in eliciting responses from it. *Secondly*, there is no imaginable criterion, by which we can establish that the wisdom of a teacher *is* absolute and illimitable. All that we can possibly discover, is, the relative fact, that another is *wiser than we*; and even this is liable to be overturned on special points, as soon as differences of judgment arise. *Thirdly*, while it is by no means clear what are the new truths, for which we are to lean upon the decisions of Jesus, it is certain that we have no genuine and trustworthy account of his teaching. If God had intended us to receive the authoritative *dicta* of Jesus, he would have furnished us with an unblemished record of those dicta. To allow that we have not this, and that we must disentangle for ourselves (by a most difficult and uncertain process) the “true” sayings of Jesus, is surely selfrefuting. *Fourthly*, if I *must* sit in judgment on the claims of Jesus to be the true Messiah and Son of God, how can I concentrate all my free thought into that one act, and thenceforth abandon free thought? This appears a moral suicide, whether Messiah or the Pope is the object whom we *first* criticize, in order to instal him over us, and *then*, for ever after, refuse to criticize. In short, *we cannot build up a system of Authority on a basis of Free Criticism*. If we are to submit our judgment to the dictation of some other,—whether a church or an individual,—we



must be first subjected to that other by some event from without, as by birth; and not by a process of that very judgment which is henceforth to be sacrificed.—I have not here urged the impossibility of making good that Jesus does actually verify the prophecies of Isaiah, Micah, Zechariah or Ezekiel: nor the extreme difficulty of approving of some of the precepts of Jesus, if once we are allowed to criticize them at all.

It is a painful thing to give up sentiments towards a historical person, which have been tenderly cherished as a religion: but so far as they cannot be cherished without sanctioning modes of argument and habits of mind which gravitate back towards that which we have discerned to be error,—and indeed error fruitful of mischief,—it is better to tear out a right eye or cut off a right hand. Those who in this spirit enter into the courts of God, will find themselves abundantly recompensed for this and every other sacrifice to truth. Whatever those may urge who are weak in understanding or in faith, there is always more to be lost than gained spiritually, for individuals and for nations, by clinging to error because it is inveterate.

## CONCLUSION.

## ON BIGOTRY AND PROGRESS.

IF any Christian reader has been patient enough to follow me thus far, I now claim that he will judge my argument and me, as before the bar of God, and not by the conventional standards of the Christian churches.

Morality and Truth are principles in human nature both older and more widespread than Christianity or the Bible : and neither Jesus nor James nor John nor Paul could have addressed or did address men in any other tone, than that of claiming to be themselves judged by some pre-existing standard of moral truth, and by the inward powers of the hearer. Does the reader deny this ? or, admitting it, does he think it impious to accept their challenge ? Does he say that we are to love and embrace Christianity, without trying to ascertain whether it is true or false ? If he say, Yes,—such a man has no love or care for Truth, and is but by accident a Christian. He would have remained a faithful heathen, had he been born in heathenism, though Moses, Elijah and Christ preached a higher truth to him. Such a man is condemned by his own confession, and I here address him no longer.

But if Faith is a spiritual and personal thing, if Belief given at random to mere high pretensions is an immorality, if Truth is not to be quite trampled down, nor Conscience to be wholly palsied in us,—then what, I ask, was I to do, when I saw that the genealogy in the first chapter of Matthew is an erroneous copy of that in the Old Testament? and that the writer has not only copied wrong, but also counted wrong, so as to mistake eighteen for fourteen? Can any man, who glories in the name of Christian, lay his hand on his heart, and say, it was my duty to blind my eyes to the fact, and think of it no farther? Many, alas, I know, would have whispered this to me; but if any one were to proclaim it, the universal conscience of mankind would call him impudent.

If however this first step was right, was a second step wrong? When I farther discerned that the two genealogies in Matthew and Luke were at variance, utterly irreconcilable,—and both, moreover, nugatory, because they are genealogies of Joseph, who is denied to be father of Jesus,—on what ground of righteousness, which I could approve to God and my conscience, could I shut my eyes to this second fact?

When forced, against all my prepossessions, to admit that the two first chapters of Matthew and the two first chapters of Luke are mutually destructive\*, would it have been faithfulness to the God

\* See Strauss, on the Infancy of Jesus.

of Truth, or a self-willed love of my own prejudices, if I had said, "I will not inquire farther, for fear it should unsettle my faith"? The reader's conscience will witness to me, that, on the contrary, I was bound to say, what I did say: "*I must* inquire farther, in order that I may plant the foundations of my faith more deeply, on the rock of Truth."

Having discovered, that not all that is within the canon of the Scripture is infallibly correct, and that the human understanding is competent to arraign and convict at least *some* kinds of error therein contained;—where was I to stop? and if I am guilty, where did my guilt begin? The farther I inquired, the more errors crowded upon me, in History, in Chronology, in Geography, in Physiology, in Geology. Did it *then* at last become a duty to close my eyes to the painful light? and if I had done so, ought I to have flattered myself that I was one of those, who, being of the truth, come to the light, that their deeds may be reprovèd?

Moreover, when I had clearly perceived, that since all evidence for Christianity must be *moral* evidence, to undervalue the moral faculties of mankind is to make Christian evidence an impossibility and to propagate universal scepticism;—was I then so to distrust the common conscience, as to believe that the Spirit of God pronounced Jael blessed, for perfidiously murdering her husband's trusting friend? Does any Protestant reader feel disgust and horror, at the sophistical defences set up for



the massacre of St. Bartholomew and other atrocities of the wicked Church of Rome? Let him stop his mouth, and hide his face, if he dares to justify the foul crime of Jael.

Or when I was thus forced to admit, that the Old Testament contained immorality, as well as error; and found nevertheless in the writers of the New Testament no indication that they were aware of either; but that on the contrary, "the Scripture" (as the book was vaguely called) is habitually identified with the infallible "word of God";—was it wrong in me to suspect that the writers of the New Testament were themselves open to mistake?

When I farther found, that Luke not only claims no infallibility and no inspiration, but distinctly assigns human sources as his means of knowledge;—when the same Luke had already been discovered to be in irreconcilable variance with Matthew concerning the infancy of Jesus;—was I sinful in feeling that I had no longer any guarantee against *other* possible error in these writers? or ought I to have persisted in obtruding on the two evangelists an infallibility of which Luke showed himself unconscious, which Matthew nowhere claims, and which I had demonstrative proof that they did not both possess? A thorough going Bibliolater will have to impeach me as a sinner on this count.

After Luke and Matthew stood before me as human writers, liable to and convicted of human error, was there any reason why I should look on

Mark as more sacred? And having perceived all three to participate in the common superstition, derived from Babylon and the East, traceable in history to its human source, existing still in Turkey and Abyssinia,—the superstition which mistakes mania, epilepsy, and other forms of disease, for possession by devils;—should I have shown love of truth, or obstinacy in error, had I refused to judge freely of these three writers, as of any others who tell similar marvels? or was it my duty to resolve, at any rate and against evidence, to acquit them of the charge of superstition and misrepresentation?

I will not trouble the reader with any farther queries. If he has justified me in his conscience thus far, he will justify my proceeding to abandon myself to the results of inquiry. He will feel, that the Will cannot, may not, dare not dictate, whereto the inquiries of the Understanding shall lead; and that to alledge that it *ought*, is to plant the root of Insincerity, Falsehood, Bigotry, Cruelty, and universal Rottenness of Soul.

The vice of Bigotry has been so indiscriminately imputed to the religious, that they seem apt to forget that it is a real sin;—nay, a sin which in Christendom has been and is of all sins most fruitful, most poisonous: nay, grief of griefs! it infects many of the purest and most lovely hearts, which want strength of understanding, or are entangled by a sham theology, with its false facts and fraudulent canons. But upon all who mourn for the

miseries which Bigotry has perpetrated from the day when Christians first learned to curse ; upon all who groan over the persecutions and wars stirred up by Romanism ; upon all who blush at the overbearing conduct of Protestants in their successive moments of brief authority,—a sacred duty rests in this nineteenth century of protesting against Bigotry, not from a love of ease, but from a spirit of earnest justice.

Like the first Christians, they must become *confessors* of the Truth ; not obtrusively, boastfully, dogmatically, or harshly ; but, “ speaking the truth in love,” not be ashamed to avow that they do not believe all that others profess, and that they abhor the unrighteous principle of judging men by an authoritative creed. The evil of Bigotry which has been most observed, is its untameable injustice, which converted the law of love into licensed murder or gratuitous hatred. But I believe a worse evil still has been, the intense reaction of the human mind against Religion for Bigotry’s sake. To the millions of Europe, bigotry has been a confutation of all pious feeling. So unlovely has religion been made by it,

Horribili super aspectu mortalibus instans,

that now, as 2000 years ago, men are lapsing into Atheism or Pantheism ; and a totally new “ dispensation ” is wanted, to retrieve the lost reputation of Piety.

Two opposite errors are committed by those who

discern that the pretensions of the national religious systems are overstrained and unjustifiable. One class of persons inveighs warmly, bitterly, rudely against the bigotry of Christians; and knows not how deep and holy affections and principles, in spite of narrowness, are cherished in the bosom of the Christian society. Hence their invective is harsh, cold, unsympathizing; and appears so essentially unjust and so ignorant, as to exasperate and increase the very bigotry which it attacks. An opposite class know well, and value highly, the moral influences of Christianity, and from an intense dread of harming or losing these, do not dare plainly and publicly to avow their own convictions. Great numbers of English laymen are entirely assured, that the Old Testament abounds with error, and that the New is not always unimpeachable: yet they only whisper this; and in the hearing of a clergyman, who is bound by Articles and whom it is indecent to refute, keep a respectful silence. As for ministers of religion, these, being called perpetually into a practical application of the received doctrine of their church, are of all men least able to inquire into any fundamental errors in that doctrine. Eminent persons among them will nevertheless aim after and attain a purer truth than that which they find established: but such a case must always be rare and exceptive. Only by disusing ministerial service can any one give fair play to doubts concerning the wisdom and truth of that which he is solemnly ministering: hence that friend of Arnold's



was wise in this world, who advised him to take a curacy in order to settle his doubts concerning the Trinity.—Nowhere from any body of priests, clergy, or ministers, as an Order, is religious progress to be anticipated, until intellectual creeds are destroyed. A greater responsibility therefore is laid upon laymen, to be faithful and bold in avowing their convictions.

Yet it is not from the practical ministers of religion, that the great opposition to religious reform proceeds. The “secular clergy” (as the Romanists oddly call them) were seldom so bigoted as the “regulars”. So with us, those who minister to men in their moral trials have for the most part a deeper moral spirit, and are less apt to place religion in systems of propositions. The *robur legionum* of bigotry, I believe, is found,—first, in non-parochial clergy, and next, in the anonymous writers for religious journals and “conservative” newspapers; who too generally\* adopt a style of which they would be ashamed, if the names of the writers were attached; who often seem desirous of making it clear that it is their trade to carp, insult or slander; who assume a tone of omniscience, at the very moment when they show narrowness of heart and judgment. To such writing those who desire to promote earnest Thought and tranquil Progress ought anxiously to testify their deep re-

\* Any orthodox periodical which dares to write charitably, is at once subjected to fierce attack as *unorthodox*.

pugnance. A large part of this slander and insult is prompted by a base pandering to the (real or imagined) taste of the public, and will abate when it visibly ceases to be gainful.

---

The law of God's moral universe, as known to us, is that of progress. We trace it from old barbarism to the methodized Egyptian idolatry; to the more flexible Polytheism of Syria and Greece; the poetical Pantheism of philosophers, and the moral monotheism of a few sages. So in Palestine and in the Bible itself we see, first of all, the image-worship of Jacob's family, then the incipient elevation of Jehovah above all other Gods by Moses, the practical establishment of the worship of Jehovah alone by Samuel, the rise of spiritual sentiment under David and the Psalmists, the more magnificent views of Hezekiah's prophets, finally in the Babylonish captivity the new tenderness assumed by that second Isaiah and by the later Psalmists. But ceremonialism more and more encrusted the restored nation; and Jesus was needed to spur and stab the conscience of his contemporaries, and recal them to more spiritual perceptions; to proclaim a coming "kingdom of heaven," in which should be gathered all the children of God that were scattered abroad; where the law of love should reign, and no one should dictate to another. After this, Stephen the

protomartyr, and Paul once his persecutor, had to expose the emptiness of all external sanctifications, and free the world from the law of Moses. *Up* to this point all Christians approve of progress; but *at* this point they want to arrest it.

The arguments of those who resist Progress are always the same, whether it be Pagans against Hebrews, Jews against Christians, Romanists against Protestants, or modern Christians against the advocates of a higher spiritualism. Each established system assures its votaries, that now at length they have attained a final perfection: that their foundations are irremovable: progress *up* to that position was a duty, *beyond* it is a sin. Each displaces its predecessor by superior goodness, but then, alas, each fights against its successor by odium, contempt, exclusions and (when possible) by violences. Each advances mankind one step, and forbids them to take a second. Yet if it be admitted that in the earlier movement the party of progress was always right, confidence that the case is now reversed is not easy to justify.

Every persecuting church has numbered among its members thousands of pious people, so grateful for its services or so attached to its truth, as to think those impious who desire something purer and more perfect. Herein we may discern, that every nation and class is liable to the peculiar illusion of overesteeming the sanctity of its ancestral creed. It is as much our duty to beware of this illusion, as of any other. All know how easily our

patriotism may degenerate into an unjust repugnance to foreigners, and that the more intense it is, the greater the need of antagonistic principles. So also, the real excellencies of our religion may only so much the more rivet us in a wrong aversion to those who do not acknowledge its authority or perfection.

It is probable that Jesus desired a state of things in which all who worship God spiritually should have an acknowledged and conscious union. It is clear that Paul longed above all things to overthrow the "wall of partition," which separated two families of sincere worshippers. Yet we now see stronger and higher walls of partition than ever, between the children of the same God,—with a new law of the letter, more entangling to the conscience, and more depressing to the mental energies, than any thing in the Levitical law. The cause of all this is to be found in *the claim of Messiahship for Jesus*. This gave a premium to crooked logic, in order to prove that the prophecies meant what they did not mean and could not mean. This perverted men's notions of right and wrong, by imparting factitious value to a literary and historical proposition, "Jesus is the "Messiah," as though that were or could be religion. This gave a merit to credulity, and led pious men to extol it as a brave and noble deed, when any one overpowered the scruples of good sense, and scolded them down as the wisdom of this world which is hostile to God. This put the Christian church into an essentially false position, by exclud-



ing from it in the first century all the men of most powerful and cultivated understanding among the Greeks and Romans. This taught Christians to boast of the hostility of the wise and prudent, and in every controversy ensured that the party which had the merit of mortifying reason most signally should be victorious. Hence, the downward career of the Church into base superstition was determined and inevitable from her very birth; nor was any improvement possible, until a reconciliation should be effected between Christianity and the cultivated reason which it had slighted and insulted.

Such reconciliation commenced, I believe, from the time when the Latin moralists were studied as a part of a theological course. It was continued with still greater results when Greek literature became accessible to churchmen. Afterwards, the physics of Galileo and of Newton began not only to undermine numerous superstitions, but to give to men a confidence in the reality of abstract truth and in our power to attain it, in other domains than that of geometrical demonstration. This, together with the philosophy of Locke, was taken up into Christian thought, and Political Toleration was the first fruit. Beyond that point, English religion has hardly gone. For in spite of all that has since been done in Germany for the true and accurate *exposition* of the Bible, and for the scientific establishment of the history of its component books, we still remain deplorably ignorant here of these subjects. In consequence English Christians do

not know that they are unjust and utterly unreasonable, in expecting thoughtful men to abide by the creed of their ancestors. Nor indeed is there any more stereotype and approved calumny, than the declaration so often emphatically enunciated from the pulpit, that *unbelief in the Christian miracles is the fruit of a wicked heart and of a soul enslaved to sin*. Thus do estimable and well-meaning men, deceived and deceiving one another, utter base slander in open church, where it is indecorous to reply to them,—and think that they are bravely delivering a religious testimony.

No difficulty is encountered, so long as the *inward* and the *outward* rule of religion agree,—by whatever names men call them,—the Spirit and the Word,—or Reason and the Church,—or Conscience and Authority. None need settle which of the two rules is the greater, so long as the results coincide: in fact, there is no controversy, no struggle, and also probably no progress. A child cannot guess whether father or mother has the higher authority, until discordant commands are given; but then commences the painful necessity of disobeying one in order to obey the other. So also, the great and fundamental controversies of religion arise, only when a discrepancy is detected between the inward and the outward rule: and then, there are only two possible solutions. If the Spirit within us and the Bible (or Church) without us are at variance, *we must either follow the inward and disregard the*

*outward law; else we must renounce the inward law and obey the outward.* The Romanist bids us to obey the Church and crush our inward judgment: the Spiritualist, on the contrary, follows his inward law, and, when necessary, defies Church, Bible or any other authority. The orthodox Protestant is better and truer than the Romanist, because the Protestant is not, like the latter, consistent in error, but often goes right: still he *is* inconsistent as to this point. Against the Spiritualist he uses Romanist principles, telling him that he ought to submit his "proud reason" and accept the "Word of God" as infallible, even though it appear to him to contain errors. But against the Romanist the same disputant avows Spiritualist principles, declaring that since "the Church" appears to him to be erroneous, he dares not to accept it as infallible. What, with the Romanist, he just called "proud reason," he now designates as Conscience, Understanding, and perhaps the Holy Spirit. He refused to allow the right of the Spiritualist to urge, that *the Bible* contains contradictions and immoralities, and therefore cannot be received; but he claims a full right to urge that *the Church* has justified contradictions and immoralities, and therefore is not to be submitted to. The perception that this position is inconsistent, and, to him who discerns the inconsistency, dishonest, is every year driving Protestants to Rome. And *in principle* there are only two possible religions; the Personal,

and the Corporate; the Spiritual, and the External. I do not mean to say that in Romanism there is nothing but what is Corporate and External; for that is impossible to human nature: but that this is what the theory of their argument demands; and their doctrine of Implicit\* (or Virtual) Faith entirely supersedes intellectual perception as well as intellectual conviction. The theory of each church is the force which determines to what centre the whole shall gravitate. However men may talk of spirituality, yet let them once enact that the freedom of individuals shall be absorbed in a corporate conscience, and you find that the narrowest heart and meanest intellect sets the rule of conduct for the whole body.

It has been often observed, how the controversies of the Trinity and Incarnation depended on the niceties of the Greek tongue. I do not know whether it has ever been inquired, what confusion of thought was shed over Gentile Christianity, from its very origin, by the imperfection of the New

\* *Explicit* Faith in a doctrine, means, that we understand what the propositions are, and accept them. But if through blunder we accept a wrong set of propositions, so as to believe a false doctrine, we nevertheless have *Implicit* (or Virtual) Faith in the true one, if only we say from the heart: "Whatever the Church believes, I believe." Thus a person, who, through blundering, believes in Sabelianism or Arianism which the Church has condemned, is regarded to have *virtual faith* in Trinitarianism, and all the "merit" of that faith, because of his good will to submit to the Church; which is the really saving virtue.



Testament Greek. The single Greek\* word πίστις needs probably three translations into our far more accurate tongue, viz., Belief, Trust, Faith; but especially Belief and Faith have important contrasts. Belief is purely intellectual, Faith is properly spiritual. Hence the endless controversy about Justification by πίστις, which has so vexed Christians; hence the slander cast on *unbelievers* or *misbelievers* (when they can no longer be burned or exiled), as though they were *faithless* and *infidels*.

But nothing of this ought to be allowed to blind us to the truly spiritual and holy developments of historical Christianity,—much less, make us revert to the old Paganism or Pantheism which it supplanted.—The great doctrine on which all practical religion depends,—the doctrine which nursed the infancy and youth of human nature,—is, “the sympathy of God with individual man.” Among Pagans this was so marred by the imperfect characters ascribed to the Gods, and the dishonorable fables told concerning them, that the philosophers who undertook to prune religion too generally cut away the root, by alledging† that God was mere Intellect and wholly destitute of Affections. But

\* Δικαιοσύνη (righteousness), Διαθήκη (covenant, testament), Χάρις (grace), are all terms pregnant with fallacy.

† Horace and Cicero speak the mind of their educated contemporaries, in saying that “we ought to pray to God *only* for external blessings, but trust to our own efforts for a pure and tranquil soul”:—a singular reversing of spiritual religion!

happily among the Hebrews the purity of God's character was vindicated; and with the growth of conscience in the highest minds of the nation the ideal image of God shone brighter and brighter. The doctrine of his Sympathy was never lost, and from the Jews it passed into the Christian church. This doctrine applied to that part of man which is divine, is the wellspring of Repentance and Humility, of Thankfulness, Love and Joy. It reproves and it comforts; it stimulates and animates. This it is which led the Psalmist to cry, "Whom have I in heaven but Thee? there is none upon earth that I desire beside Thee." This has satisfied prophets, apostles and martyrs with God as their Portion. This has been passed from heart to heart for full three thousand years, and has produced bands of countless saints. Let us not cut off our sympathies from those, who have learnt to sympathize with God, nor be blind to that spiritual good which they have; even if it be, more or less sensibly, tinged with intellectual error. In fact, none but God knows, how many Christian hearts are really pure from bigotry. I cannot refuse to add my testimony, such as it is, to the effect, that *the majority is always truehearted*. As one tyrant, with a small band of unscrupulous tools, manages to use the energies of a whole nation of kind and well meaning people for cruel purposes, so the bigoted few, who work out an evil theory with consistency, often succeed in using the masses of simpleminded

Christians as their tools for oppression. Let us not think more harshly than is necessary of the anathematizing churches. Those who curse us with their lips, often love us in their hearts. A very deep fountain of tenderness can mingle with their bigotry itself; and with tens of thousands, the evil belief is a dead form, the spiritual love is a living reality. Whether Christians like it or not, we must needs look to Historians, to Linguists, to Physiologists, to Philosophers, and generally, to men of cultivated understanding, to gain help in all those subjects which are preposterously called *Theology*: but for devotional aids, for pious meditations, for inspiring hymns, for purifying and glowing thoughts, we have still to wait upon that succession of kindling souls, among whom may be named with special honour David and Isaiah, Jesus and Paul, Augustine, A Kempis, Fenelon, Leighton, Baxter, Doddridge, Watts, the two Wesleys, and Channing.

Religion was created by the inward instincts of the soul: it had afterwards to be pruned and chastened by the sceptical understanding. For its perfection, the co-operation of these two parts of man is essential. While religious persons dread critical and searching thought, and critics despise instinctive religion, each side remains imperfect and curtailed.

It is a complaint often made by religious historians, that no church can sustain its spirituality unimpaired through two generations, and that in

the third a total irreligion is apt to supervene. Sometimes indeed the transitions are abrupt, from an age of piety to an age of dissoluteness. The liability to such lamentable revulsions is plainly due to some insufficiency in the religion to meet all the wants of human nature. To scold at that nature is puerile, and implies an ignorance of the task which religion undertakes. To lay the fault on the sovereign will of God, who has "withheld his grace" from the grandchildren of the pious, might be called blasphemy, if we were disposed to speak harshly. The fault lies undoubtedly in the fact, that Practical Devoutness and Free Thought stand apart in unnatural schism. But surely the age is ripe for something better;—for a religion which shall combine the tenderness, humility and disinterestedness, that are the glory of the purest Christianity, with that activity of intellect, untiring pursuit of truth, and strict adherence to impartial principle, which the schools of modern science embody. When a spiritual church has its senses exercised to discern good and evil, judges of right and wrong by an inward power, proves all things and holds fast that which is good, fears no truth, but rejoices in being corrected, intellectually as well as morally,—it will not be liable to be "carried to and fro" by shifting winds of doctrine. It will indeed have movement, namely a steady *onward* one, as the schools of science have had, since they left off to dogmatize and approached God's world as learners ;



but it will lay aside disputes of words, eternal vacillations, mutual illwill and dread of new light, and will be able without hypocrisy to proclaim "peace on earth and goodwill towards men", even towards those who reject its beliefs and sentiments concerning "God and his glory".

THE END.

## WORKS BY THE SAME AUTHOR.

---

THE SOUL, HER SORROWS AND HER ASPIRATIONS. An Essay towards the Natural History of the Soul as the basis of Theology. Post 8vo, cloth, 6s.

---

A HISTORY OF THE HEBREW MONARCHY, from the Administration of Samuel to the Babylonish Captivity. 8vo, cloth, 10s. 6d.

LONDON: JOHN CHAPMAN, 142, STRAND.

---

THE DIFFICULTIES OF ELEMENTARY GEOMETRY.

---

FOUR LECTURES ON THE CONTRASTS OF ANCIENT AND MODERN HISTORY.

---

ESSAY ON THE CONSTITUTIONAL AND MORAL RIGHT OF THE NATIONAL DEBT.

LONDON: TAYLOR AND WALTON, GOWER STREET.



May, 1850.

\*.\* Mr. Chapman will supply this, as well as his Catalogue of American works, gratis, or post free, on application.

*A considerable reduction has been made in the Prices of many Works included in this Catalogue.*

## LIST OF NEW AND RECENT WORKS

PUBLISHED BY

JOHN CHAPMAN,

142, STRAND, LONDON.

### Phases of Faith, or passages from the history of my creed.

By FRANCIS WILLIAM NEWMAN, author of "The History of the Hebrew Monarchy," "The Soul; her Sorrows, and her aspirations." In one vol. post 8vo. cloth. [Just ready.]

### God in Christ.

Discourses by HORACE BUSHNELL. In 1 vol. post 8vo, cloth, 6s.

#### CONTENTS.

- |   |  |
|---|--|
| I. Preliminary dissertation on the nature of language as related to thought and spirit. | III. A discourse on the Atonement.                                     |
| II. A discourse on the divinity of Christ.  | IV. A discourse on Dogma and Spirit; or the true reviving of Religion. |
- [Just ready.]

### A Historical Analysis of Christian Civilization.

By L. RAYMOND DE VERICOUR. In 1 vol. post 8vo. cloth. [Nearly ready.]

### The Temporalities of the Established Church.

As they are, and as they might be. Collected from authentic public records. By WILLIAM BEESTON, an Old Churchman. Demy 8vo, paper cover, 1s.

### Social Aspects.

CHAP. I.—Introduction, on the Decay of Nations,—The Rationale of Civilization —and the Ideal of the Perfect Man.

CHAP. II.—The Domestic Life in England.

CHAP. III.—Morality.

CHAP. IV.—Education and Position of Woman.

CHAP. V.—Aristocracy of Mammon.

CHAP. VI.—Association and Moral Mechanism.

CHAP. VII.—Literature.

CHAP. VIII.—The Literary Man.

CHAP. IX.—The Spiritual.

CHAP. X.—Retrospect and Summary.

CHAP. XI.—Conclusional.

[In the Press.]



## GREAT REDUCTION IN PRICE OF THE

### **Memoir of William Ellery Channing, D.D.**

With Extracts from his Correspondence and Manuscripts. Edited by his Nephew, WILLIAM HENRY CHANNING; and embellished by two very superior Portraits of Dr. Channing, engraved on steel, from paintings by the eminent artists Allston and Gambardella. 3 vols. post 8vo., cloth. Published at £1 8s., now reduced to 10s. 6d.

"This is a valuable contribution to literature. The peculiar eminence reached by Dr. Channing during his life makes a history of himself and of his mind indispensable to the future student of opinion."—*Athenæum*.

"It is a work of high merit, and of deep interest."—*Examiner*.

"Dr. Channing had none of the narrow intolerance that distinguishes the more rigid sectarians."—*Spectator*.

"It is pleasing to add, that objections to the theological tenets of Dr. Channing, do not prevent our entertaining a high admiration of his general writings; but this admiration rises to a far higher feeling as we study his biography; for we see that, 'singularly lofty as is the spirit which his writings breathe, he was true to them in heart and life:' and we find the secret of his

eloquence in the power which elevated ideas and enlarged conceptions of all that is just, pure, true, grand, beautiful, loving, and holy, had in the transformation of his being."—*Chambers' Journal*.

"The felicitous combination of a chaste and eloquent style with clear and powerful reasoning, placed his writings before his age generally, and far before his age in the United States."—*Tufts Magazine*.

"He was a remarkable man, and he rendered remarkable service. His mental history is deeply interesting."—*Eclectic Review*.

"We find it difficult to tear ourselves from these deeply interesting volumes, which we are disposed to rank among the best biographies of the age."—*Christian Reformer*.

### **The Purpose of Existence,**

Popularly considered, in relation to the ORIGIN, DEVELOPMENT, and DESTINY of the HUMAN MIND. Crown 8vo, cloth, 7s. 6d.

".....Such is an outline of this singularly thoughtful essay. It embraces a wide range of topics, but without ever departing from its proper theme. In the performance of his task,

the author has displayed great power of reflection, much learning, and an eloquence and elevation of style, peculiarly appropriate to the loftiness of the subject matter."—*Critic*.

### **The History of Ancient Art among the Greeks.**

By JOHN WINCKELMAN. From the German, by G. H. LODGE. Demy 8vo, cloth, with illustrations, price 12s.

"The work is throughout lucid, and free from the pedantry of technicality. Its clearness constitutes its great charm. It does not discuss any one subject at great length, but aims at a general view of Art, with attention to its minute developments. It is, if we may use the phrase, a Grammar of Greek Art, a *sine qua non* to all who would thoroughly investigate its language of form."—*Literary World*.

"Winckelman is a standard writer to whom most students of art have been more or less indebted. He possessed extensive information, a refined taste, and great zeal. His style is plain, direct, and specific, so that you are never at a loss for his meaning. Some very good outlines, representing fine types of Ancient Greek Art, illustrate

the text, and the volume is got up in a style worthy of its subject."—*Spectator*.

"The mixture of the philosopher and artist in Winckelman's mind gave it at once an elegance, penetration, and knowledge, which fitted him to a marvel for the task he undertook.....Such a work ought to be in the library of every artist and man of taste, and even the most general reader will find in it much to instruct, and much to interest him."—*Atlas*.

"To all lovers of art this volume will furnish the most necessary and safe guide in studying the pure principles of nature and beauty in creative art..... We cannot wish better to English art than for a wide circulation of this invaluable work."—*Standard of Freedom*.

A SECOND EDITION, WITH EXPLANATORY PREFACE.

**The Nemesis of Faith.**

By J. A. FROUDE, M.A., late Fellow of Exeter College, Oxford. Post 8vo. cloth, 6s.

"The Nemesis of Faith' possesses the first requisites of a book. It has power, matter, and mastery of subject, with that largeness which must arise from the writer's mind, and that individual character—those truths of detail—which spring from experience or observation. The pictures of an English home in childhood, youth, and early manhood, as well as the thoughts and feelings of the student at Oxford, are painted with feeling pervaded by a current of thought; the remarks on the humbug of the three learned professions, more especially on the worldliness of the church, are not mere declamation, but the outpouring of an earnest conviction; the picture of Anglican Protestantism, dead to faith, to love, and to almost everything but wealth-worship, with the statement of the objects that Newman first proposed to himself, form the best defence of Tractarianism that has appeared, though defence does not seem to be the object of the author. . . . . As the main literary object is to display the struggles of a mind with the growth and grounds of opinion, incident are subordinate to the intellectual results that spring from them; but there is no paucity of incident if the work be judged by its own standard."—*Spectator*.

"The most striking quality in Mr. Froude's writings is his descriptive eloquence. His characters are all living before us, and have no sameness. His quickness of eye is manifest equally in

his insight into human minds, and in his perceptions of natural beauty.. The style of the letters is everywhere charming. The confessions of a Sceptic are often brilliant, and always touching. The closing narrative is fluent, graphic, and only too highly wrought in painful beauty."—*Prospective Review*, May, 1849.

"The book becomes in its soul-burning truthfulness, a quite invaluable record of the fiery struggles and temptations through which the youth of this nineteenth century has to force its way in religious matters. . . . . Especially is it a great warning and protest against three great falsehoods. Against self-deluded word orthodoxy and bibliolatry, setting up the Bible for a mere dead idol instead of a living witness to Christ. Against frothy philosophic Infidelity, merely changing the chaff of old systems for the chaff of new, addressing mens' intellects and ignoring their spirits. Against Tractarianism, trying to make men all belief, as Strasburghers make geese all liver, by darkness and cramming; manufacturing state folly as the infidel state wisdom: deliberately giving the lie to God, who has made man in his own image, body, soul, and spirit, by making the two first decrepit for the sake of pampering the last. . . . . Against these three falsehoods, we say, does the book before us protest; after its own mournful fashion, most strongly when most unconsciously."—*Frasers' Mag.* May, 1849.

SECOND EDITION, WITH ADDITIONS.

**The Soul: her Sorrows and her Aspirations.**

An Essay towards the Natural History of the Soul, as the basis of Theology. By FRANCIS WILLIAM NEWMAN, formerly Fellow of Balliol College, Oxford, and Author of "A History of the Hebrew Monarchy." Post 8vo, cloth, 6s.

"The spirit throughout has our warmest sympathy. It contains more of the genuine life of Christianity, than half the books that are coldly elaborated in its defence. The charm of the volume is the tone of faithfulness and sincerity which it breathes—the evidences which it affords in every page, of being drawn direct from the fountains of conviction."—*Prospective Review*.

"On the great ability of the author

we need not comment. The force with which he puts his arguments, whether for good or evil, is obvious on every page."—*Literary Gazette*.

"We have seldom met with so much pregnant and suggestive matter in a small compass, as in this remarkable volume. It is distinguished by a force of thought and freshness of feeling, rare in the treatment of religious subjects."—*Inquirer*.

**Religious Ignorance; its Cause and its Cure.**

A Tract for the Times. By ALEXANDER Q. G. CRAUFURD, M.A., of Jesus College, Cambridge, formerly Curate of St. Mark's Church, Woodhouse. Leeds. Post 8vo. 1s.

## General Principles of the Philosophy of Nature.

With an Outline of some of its recent developments among the Germans, embracing the Philosophical Systems of Schelling and Hegel, and Oken's System of Nature, by J. B. STALLO, A.M. Post 8vo., cloth, 6s.

## Reverberations. Part I.

Fcp. 8vo. paper cover, 1s.

## Reverberations. Part II.

Fcp. 8vo. paper cover, 2s.

"In this little verse-pamphlet of some sixty or seventy pages, we think we see evidences of a true poet; of a fresh and natural fount of genuine song; and of a purpose and sympathy admirably suited to the times.... The purchaser of it will find himself richer in possessing it by many wise and charitable thoughts, many generous emotions, and much calm and quiet, yet deep reflection."—*Examiner*.

"Remarkable for earnestness of

thought and strength of diction."—*Morning Herald*.

"The author of these rhymed brochures has much of the true poetic spirit. He is always in earnest. He writes from the full heart. There is a manliness, too, in all his utterances that especially recommends them to us .... As long as we have such 'Reverberations' as these we shall never grow weary of them."—*Weekly News*.

## The Christian's Key to the Philosophy of Socialism;

Being Hints and Aids towards an Analytical Enquiry into the Principles of Social Progress, with a View to the Elucidation of the great practical problem of the present day,—the Improvement of the Condition of the Working Classes. In ten propositions, by UPSILON. Post 8vo, paper cover, 1s.

## The Artist's Married Life : being that of Albert Dürer.

For devout Disciples of the Arts, Prudent Maidens, as well as for the Profit and Instruction of all Christendom, given to the light. Translated from the German of Leopold Schefer, by Mrs. J. R. STODART. 1 vol. fcp. 8vo, ornamental binding, 6s.

"It is the worthy aim of the novelist to show that even the trials of genius are part of its education—that its very wounds are furrows for its harvest..... No one, indeed, would have a right to expect from the author of the 'Laienbrevier' (see *Ath.* No. 437) such a stern and forcible picture of old times and trials as a Meinhold can give—still less the wire-drawn sentimentalities of a Hahn-Hahn; but pure thoughts—high morals—tender feelings—might be looked for..... The merits of this story consist in its fine purpose, and its thoughtful, and for the most part just, exposition of man's inner life. To those who, chiefly appreciating such qualities, can dispense with the stimulants of incident and passion, the book before us will not be unacceptable."—*Athenæum*.

"The work reminds us of the happiest efforts of Tieck..... The design is to show how, in spite of every obstacle, genius will manifest itself to the world, and give shape and substance to its beautiful dreams and fancies..... It is a very pure and delightful composition, is tastefully produced in an antique style, and retains in the translation all the peculiarities (without which the book would lose half its merit) of German thought and idiom."—*Britannia*.

"Simply then we assure our readers that we have been much pleased with this work. The narrative portion is well conceived, and completely illustrates the author's moral; while it is interspersed with many passages which are full of beauty and pathos."—*Inquirer*.

## Peter Jones, or Onward Bound.

An Autobiography. Post 8vo, cloth, 3s.

"The idea of the biography is to depict a mind rising from a condition of ignorance, and, by means of mechanics' institutions, and the reading of books in the English tongue, realising for itself the relations between philosophy, science, and religion, and the

bearing of all on theological dogmata and the literature of the Hebrews. The writer is manifestly competent to his task, and has accomplished it with uncommon ability and considerable taste."—*Douglas Jerrold's Newspaper*.



## Italy: past and present.

Or, GENERAL VIEWS of its HISTORY, RELIGION, POLITICS, LITERATURE and ART. By L. MARIOTTI. 2 vols. post 8vo, cloth, 10s. 6d.

"This is a useful book, informed with lively feeling and sound judgment. It contains an exhibition of Italian views of matters, social and political, by an Italian who has learned to speak through English thoughts as well as English words. Particularly valuable are the sketches of recent Italian history; for the prominent characters are delineated in a cordial and sympathetic spirit, yet free from enthusiastic ideas, and with unsparing discrimination.....The criticisms on 'The Past' will richly repay perusal; it is, however, on 'The Present' of Italy that the main interest of the book resides.

This volume does not merely possess an interest similar to that of contemporary works; it supplies a desideratum, and is well adapted to aid the English reader in forming a just estimate of the great events now in progress in Italy. Not the least wonderful part of the book is the entire mastery the author has acquired of our language."—*Examiner*, April.

"Our author has an earnest, nay enthusiastic, love and admiration of his native country; with the ability and eloquence to render his subject very interesting and attractive."—*Morning Advertiser*.

The following notices refer to the first volume of the work:—

"The work is admirable, useful, instructive. I am delighted to find an Italian coming forward with so much noble enthusiasm, to vindicate his country and obtain for it its proper interest in the eyes of Europe. The English is wonderful.....I never saw any approach to such a style in a foreigner before—as full of beauty in diction as in thought."—*Sir E. Bulwer Lytton, Bart.*

"I recognise the rare characteristics of genius—a large conception of the topic, a picturesque diction founded on profound thought, and that passionate sensibility which becomes the subject—a subject beautiful as its climate, and inexhaustible as its soil."—*B. Disraeli, Esq., M.P.*

"A very rapid and summary *resume* of the fortunes of Italy from the fall of the Roman Empire to the present moment.—A work of industry and labour, written with a good purpose.—A bird's-eye view of the subject that will revive the recollections of the scholar, and seduce the tyro into a longer course of reading."—*Athenæum*.

"This work contains more information on the subject, and more references to the present position of Italy, than we have seen in any recent production."—*Foreign Quarterly Review*.

"In reference to style, the work

before us is altogether extraordinary, as that of a foreigner, and in the higher quality of thought we may commend the author for his acute, and often original, criticism, and his quick perception of the grand and beautiful in his native literature."—*Prescott (in the North American Review)*.

"The work before us consists of a continuous parallel of the political and literary history of Italy from the earliest period of the middle ages to the present time. The author not only penetrates the inner relations of those dual appearances of national life, but possesses the power of displaying them to the reader with great clearness and effect. We remember no other work in which the civil conditions and literary achievements of a people have been blended in such a series of living pictures, representing successive periods of history."—*Algemeine Zeitung*.

"An earnest and eloquent work."—*Examiner*.

"A work ranking distinctly in the class of belles lettres, and well deserving of a library place in England."—*Literary Gazette*.

"A work warmly admired by excellent judges."—*Tail's Magazine*.

"An admirable work written with great power and beauty."—*Prof. Longfellow. (Poets and Poetry of Europe.)*

## The Principles of Nature, her Divine Revelations, and a Voice

TO MANKIND. By and through ANDREW JACKSON DAVIS, the "Poughkeepsie Seer," and "Clairvoyant." 2 vols. large 8vo. cloth, 18s.

\* \* The Work consists of 800 pages, including a history of its production, with a Biographical Sketch, and Portrait (engraved on Steel) of the Author.



## Poems. By Ralph Waldo Emerson.

Post 8vo. 4s. cloth gilt.

"There are in these stanzas many a fine image and sometimes a cluster of such—scattered symbols of deep significance—and the presence of sincere and earnest thinking everywhere..... A wild low music accompanies these artless strains; an indistinct, uncertain melody—such a tune as an untaught musical nature might choose to itself in solitary places..... There are sometimes stanzas which are suggestive, not only in a political relation, but in one far higher—as touching those social reforms which now everywhere command the attention of society. Some portions of a series of poems entitled 'Wood Notes,' are in their peculiar way yet finer; and the entire succession has been enthusiastically received on the other side of the Atlantic."—*Athenæum*.

"There are in this volume unmistakable evidences of genius; the soul of the poet flashes out continually; and the hand of the poet is seen often."—*Critic*.

"He occasionally reminds us of the reflective depth of Wordsworth; and sometimes evinces a delicate fancy and richness of epithet worthy of Tennyson."—*Manchester Examiner*.

"His lines are full of meaning."—*Inquirer*.

"To read his finer pieces is to our poetic feeling like receiving a succession of electric shocks;.... even his unshaped fragments are not bits of glass but of diamond, and have always the true poetic lustre. We know of no compositions that surpass his in their characteristic excellence."—*Christian Examiner*.

## Endeavours after the Christian Life. (First Series.)

By JAMES MARTINEAU. Second Edition. 12mo, 7s. 6d. cloth.

## Endeavours after the Christian Life. (Second Series.)

By JAMES MARTINEAU. 12mo, 7s. 6d. cloth.

"Heartily do we welcome a second volume of 'Endeavours after the Christian Life,' because when all that suits not our taste is omitted, we have still left more to instruct, interest, improve, and elevate, than in almost any other volume with which we are acquainted..... Whatever may be its defects, we regard it as one of the most precious gifts to the religious world in modern times."—*Inquirer*.

"Mr. Martineau is known, much beyond the limits of his own denomination, as a man of great gifts and accomplishments, and his publications have been all marked by subtle and vigorous thought, much beauty of imagination, and certain charms of composition, which are sure to find admirers..... There is a delicacy and ethereality of ethical sentiment in these discourses which must commend them, and we may safely say that many

of the orthodox in all departments might receive from them intellectual stimulus, moral polish, and in some moods religious edification."—*Nonconformist*.

"One of the most interesting, attractive, and most valuable series of essays which the literature of Christianity has received from priest or layman for many a year.

"Volumes that have in them both intellect and true eloquence, and which satisfy the understanding while they please the taste and improve the heart.

"When we say that these *Discourses* are eminently *practical*, we mean that they are adapted, not only for man in the abstract—to teach the duties of Christianity everywhere—but also with reference to the circumstances of society—of the age and country in which our lot is cast."—*Critic*.

## Political Economy, and the Philosophy of Government.

A Series of Essays selected from the works of M. DE SISMONDI. With an Historical Notice of his Life and Writings by M. MIGNET. Translated from the French, and illustrated by Extracts from an unpublished Memoir, and from M. de Sismondi's private Journals and Letters, to which is added a List of his Works, and a preliminary Essay, by the Translator. 8vo. cloth, 6s.

"In this country the views of Sismondi, long derided, and long kept down, have lately achieved a signal triumph, and are still advancing for the amelioration of social ills..... The essays

embody Sismondi's settled views on Political Economy, and on the true policy which should animate a Govern-

ment..... After having studied more deeply than most men, the science of Government and the speculations of Political Philosophy, he settled down into the conviction that the principles of Christianity were as applicable to the life of nations as to that of individuals, and that the happiness of the

people would be best promoted by observing them..... Besides the essays the volume contains many curious illustrations of the Life of Sismondi..... In an ingenious preliminary essay by the translator, the views of Sismondi are applied to our social condition at the present time."—*Britannia*.

## A Brief Exposition of the Gospel of St. Matthew.

By the Rev. R. E. B. MACLELLAN, of Cambridge. 12mo. cloth, price 3s.

## History of the Hebrew Monarchy, from the Administration of

Samuel to the Babylonish Captivity. By FRANCIS WILLIAM NEWMAN, formerly Fellow of Balliol College, Oxford, and Author of "The Soul; her Sorrows and Aspirations, &c." 8vo, cloth, 10s. 6d.

"It is truly refreshing to find Jewish history treated, as in the volume before us, according to the rules of sound criticism, and good sense..... The publication of such a work will form an epoch in biblical literature in this country."—*Inquirer*.

"The Author has brought a very acute mind, familiar with knowledge that is beyond the range of ordinary scholarship, to the task of combining and interpreting the antique and fragmentary records which contain the

only materials for his work."—*Prospective Review*.

"This book must be regarded, we think, as the most valuable contribution ever made in the English Language to our means of understanding that portion of Hebrew History to which it relates..... The Author has not the common superstitious reverence for the Bible, but he shows everywhere a large, humane, and Christian spirit."—*Massachusetts Quarterly Review*.

## Honour; or, the Story of the brave Caspar and the fair Annerl.

By CLEMENS BRENTANO. With an Introduction and a Biographical Notice of the Author, by T. W. APPELL, Translated from the German. Fcp. 8vo. gilt edges, 1s. 6d.

## Shakspeare's Dramatic Art, and his relation to Calderon and

Goethe. Translated from the German of Dr. HERMANN ULRICH. 8vo. 7s. 6d. cloth.

### Outline of Contents.

- I. Sketch of the History of the English Drama before Shakspeare. —R. Greene and Marlowe.
- II. Shakspeare's Life and Times.
- III. Shakspeare's Dramatic Style, and Poetic View of the World and Things.

- IV. Criticism of Shakspeare's Plays.
- V. Dramas ascribed to Shakspeare of doubtful Authority.
- VI. Calderon and Goethe in their relation to Shakspeare.

"We strongly recommend the book to the notice of every lover of Shakspeare, for we may truly say that it is well calculated to fill up a void in our own as well as in German literature."—*Westminster Review*.

"The author has the 'Philosophic depth,' which we vainly look for in Schlegel's criticism of the great poet."—*The Dial*.

"We welcome it as an addition to our books on the national dramatist—exhaustive, comprehensive, and philosophical after a scholastic fashion, and throwing new lights upon many things in Shakspeare."—*Spectator*.

"The work of Ulrich in the original, has held, ever since its publication, an honoured place upon our shelves. We

consider it as being, when taken all in all, one of the most valuable contributions ever made to the criticism of Shakspeare. The theoretical system upon which it rests, if not altogether accurate or completely exhaustive, is, at all events, wide and searching; its manner of expression is almost everywhere clear and practical, and its critical expositions are given with equal delicacy of feeling and liveliness of fancy..... Here there are treated, successively, Shakspeare's language, his mode of representing characters, and his dramatic invention."—*Tait's Magazine*.

"A good translation of Dr. Ulrich's work on Shakspeare cannot fail of being welcome to the English thinker. It is



in fact, a vindication of our great poet from a charge which has lately been brought against him by critics on both sides of the Atlantic. Dr. Ulrici boldly claims for him the rank of an eminently Christian author. .... The present work is the least German of all German books, and contains remark-

able novelty in its views of the subject and the arrangement of its topics. The plan adopted by Dr. Ulrici of contemplating each play in the light of a central idea is especially deserving of all praise. .... We recommend the entire criticism to the perusal of the judicious reader."—*Athenæum*.

## The Life of Jesus, Critically Examined.

By DR. DAVID FRIEDRICH STRAUSS. 3 vols. 8vo. £1 16s. cloth.

"The extraordinary merit of this book.... Strauss's dialectic dexterity, his forensic coolness, the even polish of his style, present him to us as the accomplished pleader, too completely master of his work to feel the temptation to unfair advantage or unseemly temper.... We can testify that the translator has achieved a very tough work with remarkable spirit and fidelity. The author, though indeed a good writer, could hardly have spoken better had his country and language been English. The work has evidently fallen into the hands of one who has not only effective command of both languages, but a familiarity with the subject-matter of theological criticism, and an initiation into its technical phraseology."—*Westminster and Foreign Quarterly Review*, 1847.

"Whoever reads these volumes without any reference to the German, must be pleased with the easy, perspicuous, idiomatic, and harmonious force of the English style. But he will be still more satisfied when, on turning to the original, he finds that the rendering is word for word, thought for thought, and sentence for sentence. In preparing so beautiful a rendering as the present, the difficulties can have been neither few nor small in the way of preserving, in various parts of the work, the exactness of the translation, combined with that uniform harmony and clearness of style, which impart

to the volumes before us the air and spirit of an original. A modest and kindly care for his reader's convenience has induced the translator often to supply the rendering into English of a Greek quotation, where there was no corresponding rendering into German in the original. Indeed, Strauss may well say, as he does in the notice, which he writes for this English edition, that as far as he has examined it, the translation is, "et accurata et perspicua."—*Prospective Review*.

"In regard to learning, acuteness, and sagacious conjectures, the work resembles Niebuhr's 'History of Rome.' The general manner of treating the subject and arranging the chapters, sections, and parts of the argument, indicates consummate dialectical skill; while the style is clear, the expression direct, and the author's openness in referring to his sources of information, and stating his conclusions in all their simplicity, is candid and exemplary. .... It not only surpasses all its predecessors of its kind in learning, acuteness, and thorough investigation, but it is marked by a serious and earnest spirit."—*Christian Examiner*.

"I found in M. Strauss a young man full of candour, gentleness, and modesty—one possessed of a soul that was almost mysterious, and, as it were, saddened by the reputation he had gained. He scarcely seems to be the author of the work under consideration."—*Quinet, Revue des Mondes*.

## The Races of Man; and their Geographical Distribution.

By CHARLES PICKERING, M.D., attached to the United States Exploring Expedition. 4to. cloth, colored plates. Price £3 3s.

\*.\* Of this important work only 150 copies are published for distribution by the United States Government.

"This is one of the series of valuable scientific works in which have been embodied the most valuable results of the investigations, which the United States exploring expedition was sent forth to prosecute. It was a great advantage to such an expedition, that it should contain among its scientific corps a naturalist of Dr. Pickering's eminence; the fidelity of whose observations, and the sagacity of whose judgments should dispose us to receive his statements with a confidence that must be withheld

from those of less competent witnesses. .... The plates that accompany the work are beautifully executed portraits of individuals, considered by Dr. Pickering as characteristics of the Races he enumerates—no pains or expense have been spared by the government; on which the whole 'getting up' of this volume, and of several treatises having the same origin, reflects the highest credit."—*British & Foreign Medico-Chirurgical Review*, January, 1850.

## The Dramas of Iphigenia in Tauris, and Torquato Tasso, of

GOETHE; and the MAID OF ORLEANS, of SCHILLER. Translated, (omitting some passages,) with Introductory Remarks, by ANNA SWANWICK. 8vo. cloth; 6s.

"It is seldom that we meet with a translator so competent as the lady who has here rendered these selections from the two great poets of Germany into elegant and vigorous English verse. The 'Iphigenia' of Goethe has been already well done by Mr. William Taylor, of Norwich; but his version is not, by many degrees, so readable as the one before us."—*Athenæum*.

"We have to congratulate the translator on perfect success in a very difficult task."—*Dublin University Magazine*

"The translator has gone to her beautiful task in the right spirit, adhering with fidelity to the words of the original, and evidently penetrating the mind of the poet. The translations

are very beautiful; and while they will serve to make the mere English reader acquainted with two of the most perfect works ever written, the Iphigenia and the Tasso they will form useful assistants to those who are commencing the study of the German language."—*Foreign Quarterly Review*.

"This English version presents these poems to us in a garb not unworthy of the conceptions of their authors."—*Morning Chronicle*.

"The verse is smooth and harmonious, and no one acquainted with the original can fail to be struck with its great fidelity and accuracy."—*Christian Teacher*.

## Channing's Works, Complete.

Edited by JOSEPH BARKER. In 6 vols. 12mo. 6s. sewed, 8s. cloth.

## A Retrospect of the Religious Life of England;

Or, the Church, Puritanism, and Free Inquiry. By JOHN JAMES TAYLER, B.A. Post 8vo, 10s. 6d. cloth.

"This work is written in a chastely beautiful style, manifests extensive reading and careful research; is full of thought, and decidedly original in its character. It is marked also by the modesty which usually characterises true merit."—*Inquirer*.

"Mr. Tayler is actuated by no sectarian bias, and we heartily thank him for this addition to our religious literature."—*Westminster Review*.

"It is not often our good fortune to meet with a book so well conceived, so well written, and so instructive as this. The various phases of the national mind, described with the clearness and force of Mr. Tayler, furnish inexhaustable material for reflection. Mr. Tayler regards all parties from an equitable point of view, is tolerant towards intolerance, and admires zeal and excuses

fanaticism, wherever he sees honesty. Nay, he openly asserts that the religion of mere reason is not the religion to produce a practical effect on a people; and therefore regards his own class only as one element in a better principle church. The clear and comprehensive grasp with which he marshals his facts, is even less admirable than the impartiality, nay, more than that, the general kindness with which he reflects upon them."—*Examiner*.

"The writer of this volume has all the calmness belonging to one who feels himself not mixed up with the struggle he describes. There is about it a tone of great moderation and candour: and we cannot but feel confident that we have here, at least, the product of a thoroughly honest mind."—*Lowe's Edinburgh Magazine*

## The Elements of Individualism.

By WILLIAM MACCALL. Post 8vo. 7s. 6d. cloth.

"It is a book worthy of perusal. Even those who can find no sympathy with its philosophy, will derive pleasure and improvement from the many exquisite touches of feeling, and the many pictures of beauty which mark its pages.

"The expansive philosophy, the penetrative intellect, and the general humanity of the author have rendered

*The Elements of Individualism* a book of strong and general interest."—*Critic*.

"We have been singularly interested by this book. . . . Here is a speaker and thinker whom we may securely feel to be a lover of truth, exhibiting in his work a form and temper of mind very rare and peculiar in our time."—*Manchester Examiner*.



## A Discourse of Matters pertaining to Religion.

By THEODORE PARKER. Post 8vo. 7s. cloth.

### CONTENTS:

Book 1.—Of Religion in General; or, a Discourse of the Sentiment and its Manifestations.

Book 2.—The Relation of the Religious Sentiment to God; or, a Discourse of Inspiration.

Book 3.—The Relation of the Religious Sentiment to Jesus of Nazareth; or, a Discourse of Christianity.

"Mr. Parker is a very original writer. We recommend the work to our readers as one of a very remarkable kind, which cannot fairly be judged of by detached extracts."—*Edinburgh Review*, October, 1847.

"Parker writes like a Hebrew prophet, enriched by the ripest culture of the modern world.....His loftiest theories come thundering down into life with a rapidity and directness of aim which, while they alarm the timid and amaze the insincere, afford proof that he is less eager to be a reformer of men's thinking, than a thinker for their reformation. Whatever judgment the reader may pronounce on the philosophy of the volume, he will close it, we venture to affirm, with the consciousness that he leaves the presence of a truly great mind; of one who is not only unoppressed by his large store of learning, but seems absolutely to require a massive weight of knowledge to resist and regulate the native force of his thought, and occupy the grasp of his imagination."—*Westminster and Foreign Quarterly Review*, 1847.

"There is a mastery shown over every element of the Great Subject, and the slight treatment of it in parts no reader can help attributing to the plan of the work, rather than to the incapacity of the author. From the resources of a mind singularly exuberant by nature and laboriously enriched by culture, a system of results is here thrown up, and spread out in luminous exposition."—*Prospective Review*.

Book 4.—The Relation of the Religious Sentiment to the Greatest of Books; or, a Discourse of the Bible.

Book 5.—The Relation of the Religious Sentiment to the Greatest of Human Institutions; or, a Discourse of the Church.

"Mr. Parker is no ephemeral teacher. ....His aspirations for the future are not less glowing than his estimate for the past. He revels in warm anticipations of the orient splendours, of which all past systems are but the precursors. .... His language is neither narrow nor unattractive; there is a consistency and boldness about it which will strike upon chords which, when they do vibrate, will make the ears more than tingle. We are living in an age which deals in broad and exhaustive theories; which requires a system that will account for everything, and assigns to every fact a place, and that no forced one, in the vast economy of things."—*Christian Remembrancer*.

"It is impossible for any one to read the writings of Theodore Parker without being strongly impressed by them. They abound in passages of fervid eloquence—eloquence as remarkable for the truth of feeling which directs it, as for the genius by which it is inspired. They are distinguished by philosophical thought and learned investigation, no less than by the sensibility to beauty and goodness which they manifest."—*Christian Reformer*.

## Statistics of Coal.

The Geographical and Geological distribution of Fossil, Fuel, or Mineral Combustibles employed in the Arts and Manufactures; their production, consumption, commercial distribution, prices, duties, and international regulations in all parts of the world; including four hundred statistical tables, and eleven hundred analyses of mineral bituminous substances; with incidental statements of the statistics of the Iron manufactures, &c., &c., derived from official reports and accredited authorities. Illustrated with colored maps and diagrams. By RICHARD COWLING TAYLOR, F.G.S., &c., &c., 8vo. cloth. Price 30s.

"It would be impossible, in the present limited sketch, to give even a brief account of the descriptive portion of this work, seven hundred and fifty pages of which are occupied with full details of all the Coal fields and fuel deposits on the surface of the Globe ..... We cannot enlarge further on

the various geological and economical data contained in this volume, which has now become a work of the greatest public utility..... We thank him (the author) for reducing these scattered materials into so useful and accessible a form."—*Weekly News*.

## **The Education of the Feelings.**

By CHARLES BRAY. Second Edition. Post 8vo. cloth, 2s, 6d.

## **Three Experiments of Living:—**

Within the Means. Up to the Means. Beyond the Means. Fcp. 8vo. ornamental cover and gilt edges, 1s.

## **Prose Writers of Germany.**

By FREDERIC H. HEDGE. Illustrated with Portraits. 8vo. cloth, extra gilt, Price 20s.

CONTENTS:—Luther, Jacob Boehme, Justus Moser, Kant, Lessing, Mendelssohn, Hamann, Wieland, Claudius, Lavater, Jacobi, Herder, Goethe, Schiller, Fichte, Richter, Schlegels, Schleiermacher, Hegel, Zschokke, Novalis, Tieck, Schelling, Hoffmann, Chamisso, &c., with sketches of their lives and extracts from their writings.

## **The Decay of Traditional Faith, and Re-establishment of Faith**

UPON PHILOSOPHY: Two Lectures delivered at Finsbury Chapel, South Place. By HENRY IERSON, A.M. Post 8vo. paper cover, Price 1s.

## **Historical Sketches of the Old Painters.**

By the Author of the "Log Cabin." 2s. 6d. paper cover 3s. cloth.

## **Hymns for the Christian Church and Home.**

Edited by JAMES MARTINEAU. Sixth Edition, 12mo. 3s. 6d. cloth.

## **The Life of the Rev. Joseph Blanco White.**

Written by Himself. With Portions of his Correspondence. Edited by JOHN HAMILTON THOM. 3 vols. post 8vo. £1 4s. cloth.

"This is a book which rivets the attention, and makes the heart bleed. It has, indeed, with regard to himself, in its substance, though not in its arrangement, an almost dramatic character; so clearly and strongly is the living, thinking, active man projected from the face of the records which he has left.

"His spirit was a battle-field, upon which, with, fluctuating fortune and singular intensity, the powers of belief and scepticism waged, from first to last, their unceasing war; and within the compass of his experience are presented to our view most of the great moral and spiritual problems that attach to the condition of our race."—*Quarterly Review*.

"This book will improve his (Blanco White's) reputation. There is much in

the peculiar construction of his mind, in its close union of the moral with the intellectual faculties, and in its restless desire for truth, which may remind the reader of Dr. Arnold."—*Examiner*.

"There is a depth and force in this book which tells."—*Christian Remembrancer*.

"These volumes have an interest beyond the character of Blanco White. And beside the intrinsic interest of his self-portraiture, whose character is indicated in some of our extracts, the correspondence, in the letters of Lord Holland, Southey, Coleridge, Channing, Norton, Mill, Professor Powell, Dr. Hawkins, and other names of celebrity, has considerable attractions in itself, without any relation to the biographical purpose with which it was published."—*Spectator*.

## **Luther Revived.**

Or, a Short Account of Johannes Ronge, the Bold Reformer of the Catholic Church in Germany. By A. ANDRESEN. 8vo. 1s.

## **The Education of Taste.**

A Series of Lectures. By WILLIAM MACCALL. 12mo. 2s. 6d.

## The Beauties of Channing.

With an Essay prefixed. By WILLIAM MOUNTFORD. 12mo, cloth, 2s. 6d.

"This is really a book of beauties. It is no collection of shreds and patches, but a faithful representative of a mind which deserves to have its image reproduced in a thousand forms. It is such a selection from Channing as Channing himself might have made. It is as though we had the choicest passages of those divine discourses read

to us by a kindred spirit.....Those who have read *Martyria* will feel that no man can be better qualified than its author, to bring together those passages which are at once most characteristic, and most rich in matter tending to the moral and religious elevation of human beings."—*Inquirer*.

## Life of Godfrey W. von Leibnitz.

By J. M. MACKIE. 12mo. 3s. 6d. cloth.

"We commend this book, not only to scholars and men of science, but to all our readers who love to contemplate the life and labours of a great and good man. It merits the special notice of all who are interested in the business of

education, and deserves a place, by the side of Brewster's *Life of Newton*, in all the libraries of our schools, academies, and literary institutions."—*Christian Watchman*.

## The Agents of Civilization.

A Series of Lectures. By WILLIAM MACCALL. 12mo. 3s. 6d. cloth.

## Lectures on the Memory of the Just ;

Being a Series of Discourses in the Lives and Times of the Ministers of Mill Hill Chapel, Leeds. By Rev. C. WICKSTEAD. Second Edition, 8vo. cloth, 3s. 6d.

## An Inquiry concerning the Origin of Christianity.

By CHARLES C. HENNEL. Second Edition, 8vo. 12s. cloth.

## Christian Theism.

By the Author of "An Inquiry concerning the Origin of Christianity." 8vo. 2s. 6d. cloth.

## The Log Cabin ; or the World before you.

By the Author of "Three Experiments of Living," "Sketches of the Old Painters." &c. 1s. paper cover ; 1s. 6d. cloth ; 2s. extra cloth, gilt edges.

## Stories for Sunday Afternoons.

From the Creation to the Advent of the Messiah. For the use of Children from 5 to 11 years of age. By MRS. GEORGE DAWSON, (late MISS SUSAN FANNY CROMPTON.) 16mo, 1s. 6d. cloth.

"This is a very pleasing little volume, which we can confidently recommend. It is designed and admirably adapted for the use of children from five to eleven years of age. It purposes to infuse into that tender age some acquaintance with the facts, and taste for the study of the Old Testament. The style is simple, easy, and for the

most part correct. The stories are told in a spirited and graphic manner.

"Those who are engaged in teaching the young, and in laying the foundation of good character by early religious and moral impressions, will be thankful for additional resources of a kind so judicious as this volume."—*Inquirer*.

## The Autobiography and Justification of J. Ronge.

Translated from the German, Fifth Edition, by J. LORD, A.M. Fcp. 8vo. 1s.

"A plain, straightforward, and manly statement of facts connected with the

career of this remarkable man."—*Westminster Review*.



## Sermons by the Late Rev. Henry Acton of Exeter;

With a Memoir of his Life. Edited by the REV. W. JAMES AND J. REYNELL WREFORD, F.S.A. Post 8vo. cloth, price 7s. 6d.

## Christianity: the Deliverance of the Soul, and its Life.

By WILLIAM MOUNTFORD, M.A. Fcp 8vo, cloth; 2s.

## Martyria: a Legend.

Wherein are contained Homilies, Conversations, and Incidents of the Reign of Edward the Sixth. Written by WILLIAM MOUNTFORD, Clerk. Fcp. 8vo. cloth; 6s.

## The Sick Chamber: a Manual for Nurses.

18mo. 1s. cloth.

"A small but sensible and useful treatise, which might be fittingly entitled the Sick Room Manual. It is a brief outline of the necessary cares and precautions which the chamber of an invalid requires, but which even quick sighted affection does not always divine."—*Atlas*.

## The Complete Works of the Rev. Orville Dewey, D.D.

8vo. 7s. 6d. cloth.

## Livermore's Commentary on the Four Gospels.

8vo. 4s. 6d. cloth.

## Two Orations against taking away Human Life, under any

Circumstances; and in explanation and defence of the misrepresented doctrine of Non-resistance. By THOMAS COOPER, Author of "The Purgatory of Suicides." Post 8vo. 1s. in paper cover.

"Mr. Cooper possesses undeniable abilities of no mean order, and moral courage beyond many..... The manliness with which he avows, and the boldness and zeal with which he urges, the doctrines of peace and love, respect for human rights, and moral power, in these lectures, are worthy of all honour."—*Nonconformist*.

"Mr. Cooper's style is intensely clear and forcible, and displays great earnestness and fine human sympathy;

it is in the highest degree manly, plain, and vigorous."—*Morning Advertiser*.

"These two orations are thoroughly imbued with the peace doctrines which have lately been making rapid progress in many unexpected quarters. To all who take an interest in that great movement, we would recommend this book, on account of the fervid eloquence and earnest truthfulness which pervades every line of it."—*Manchester Examiner*.

## The North American Review.

Published Quarterly. Price 6s. No. 147, for April, 1850, just received.

## The Truth Seeker in Literature, Philosophy, and Religion.

Devoted to free and Catholic enquiry, and to the Transcendental and Spiritual Philosophy of the Age. New Series, Published Quarterly, Price 2s.

## The Prospective Review.

A Quarterly Journal of Theology and Literature.

*Respite, Aspic, PROSPICE.*—*St. Bernard*.

"THE PROSPECTIVE REVIEW is devoted to a free THEOLOGY, and the moral aspects of LITERATURE. Under the conviction that lingering influences from the doctrine of verbal inspiration are not only depriving the primitive records of the Gospel of their true interpretation, but even destroying faith in Christianity itself, the Work is conducted in the confidence that only a living mind and heart, not in bondage to any letter, can receive the living *spirit* of Revelation; and in the



fervent belief that for all such *there is* a true Gospel of God, which no critical or historical speculation can discredit or destroy. It aims to interpret and represent Spiritual Christianity, in its character of the Universal Religion. Fully adopting the sentiment of Coleridge, that 'the exercise of the reasoning and reflective powers, increasing insight, and enlarging views, are requisite to keep alive the substantial faith of the heart.'—with a grateful appreciation of the labours of faithful predecessors of all Churches,—it esteems it the part of a true reverence not to rest in their conclusions, but to think and live in their spirit. By the name 'PROSPECTIVE REVIEW,' it is intended to lay no claim to Discovery, but simply to express the *desire* and the *attitude* of Progress; to suggest continually the Duty of using Past and Present as a trust for the Future; and openly to disown the idolatrous Conservatism, of whatever sect, which makes Christianity but a lifeless formula."—*Extract from the Prospectus.*

No. XXII. was published on the 1st of May, 1850. Price 2s. 6d.

Works for Review to be sent to the Publisher or Editors; Advertisements in all cases to the Publisher.

## The Evidences of the Genuineness of the Gospels.

By ANDREWS NORTON, Professor of Sacred Literature, Harvard University, Massachusetts. 2 vols. 8vo. 12s. cloth.

\*\*\* There are about fifty pages of new matter in the first volume, and this edition of the work embodies throughout various alterations and corrections made by the author at the present time.

### NOTICES OF THE WORK.

"Professor Norton has devoted a whole volume full of ingenious reasoning and solid learning, to show that the Gnostic sects of the second century admitted in general the same sacred books with the orthodox Christians. However doubtful may be his complete success, he has made out a strong case, which, as far as it goes, is one of the most valuable confutations of the extreme German *χρυσολογιστες*, an excellent subsidiary contribution to the proof of the 'genuineness of the Scriptures.'\*\*\* His work on the Genuineness of the Scriptures is of a high intellectual order."—*Quarterly Review*, March, 1846.

"This (the 2nd and 3rd volumes) is a great work upon the philosophy of the early history of our faith, and upon the relations of that faith with the religious systems and the speculative opinions which then formed the belief or engaged the attention of the whole civilized world. The subject is one of vast compass and great importance; and fortunately it has been examined with much thoroughness, caution, and independence. The conclusions arrived at are those of one who thinks for himself, —not created by early prepossessions, nor restricted within the narrow limits of opinions peculiar to any school or sect. The originality and good sense of Mr. Norton's general remarks impress the reader quite as strongly as the accuracy of his scholarship, and the wide range of learning with which the subject is illustrated. His mind is neither cumbered nor confused by the rich store of its acquisitions, but works with the greatest clearness and effect when en-

gaged in the most discursive and far-reaching investigations. Nearly the whole of the work, as the German would say, belongs to the history of 'pure reason.' The originality of Mr. Norton's views is one of their most striking characteristics. He does not deem it necessary, as too many theologians have done, to defend the records of his faith by stratagem. The consequence is, that his work is one of the most unanswerable books that ever was written. It comes as near to demonstration as the nature of moral reasoning will admit.

"As an almost unrivalled monument of patience and industry, of ripe scholarship, thorough research, eminent ability, and conscientious devotion to the cause of truth, the work may well claim respectful consideration. The reasoning is eminently clear, simple, and direct; and abounds with the results of the most profound learning."—*North American Review*.

"The first volume of this work was published so long ago as the year 1837. At the close of it the author announces his intention to pursue the argument, by inquiring into the evidence to be derived from the testimony of the different heretical Sects. It is to this part of the subject that the second and third volumes, now before us, are directed,—which are evidently the fruit of much labour, research, and extensive reading; and contain a variety of very curious incidental matter, highly interesting to the student of ecclesiastical history, and of the human mind."—*Prospective Review*.

## The Catholic Series.\*

---

THE Publisher of "The Catholic Series" intends it to consist of Works of a liberal and comprehensive character, judiciously selected, embracing various departments of literature.

An attempt has been made by the Church of Rome to realize the idea of Catholicism—at least in *form*—and with but a partial success; an attempt will now be made to restore the word *Catholic* to its primitive significance, in its application to this Series, and to realize the idea of Catholicism in SPIRIT.

It cannot be hoped that each volume of the Series will be essentially Catholic, and not *partial*, in its nature, for nearly all men are partial;—the many-sided and *impartial*, or truly Catholic man, has ever been the rare exception to his race. Catholicity may be expected in the *Series*, not in every volume composing it.

An endeavour will be made to present to the Public a class of books of an interesting and thoughtful nature, and the authors of those of the Series which may be of a philosophical character will probably possess little in common, except a love of intellectual freedom and a faith in human progress; they will be united rather by sympathy of SPIRIT than by agreement in speculation.

\* For List of Works already published in the series, see pages 17 to 24.

## CHARACTERIZATION OF THE CATHOLIC SERIES

BY THE PRESS.

---

"The various works composing the "Catholic Series," should be known to all lovers of literature, and may be recommended as calculated to instruct and elevate by the proposition of noble aims and the inculcation of noble truths, furnishing reflective and cultivated minds with more wholesome food than the nauseous trash which the popular tale-writers of the day set before their readers."—*Morning Chronicle*.

"Too much encouragement cannot be given to enterprising publications like the present. They are directly in the teeth of popular prejudice and popular trash. They are addressed to the higher class of readers—those who think as well as read. They are works at which ordinary publishers shudder as 'unsaleable,' but which are really capable of finding a very large public."—*Foreign Quarterly*.

"The works already published embrace a great variety of subjects, and display a great variety of talent. They are not exclusively nor even chiefly religious; and they are from the pens of German, French, American, as well as English authors. Without reference to the opinion which they contain, we may safely say that they are generally such as all men of free and philosophical minds would do well to know and ponder."—*Nonconformist*.

"This series deserves attention, both for what it has already given, and for what it promises."—*Tait's Magazine*.

"A series not intended to represent or maintain a form of opinion, but to bring together some of the works which do honour to our common nature, by the genius they display, or by their ennobling tendency and lofty aspirations."—*Inquirer*.

"It is highly creditable to Mr. Chapman to find his name in connexion with so much well-directed enterprise in the cause of German literature and philosophy. He is the first publisher who seems to have proposed to himself the worthy object of introducing the English reader to the philosophic mind of Germany, uninfluenced by the tradesman's distrust of the marketable nature of the article. It is a very praiseworthy ambition; and we trust the public will justify his confidence. Nothing could be more unworthy than the attempt to discourage, and indeed punish, such unselfish enterprise, by attaching a bad reputation for orthodoxy to every thing connected with German philosophy and theology. This is especially unworthy in the 'student,' or the 'scholar,' to borrow Fichte's names, who should disdain to set themselves the task of exciting, by their friction, a popular prejudice and clamour on matters on which the populace are no competent judges, and have, indeed, no judgment of their own,—and who should feel, as men themselves devoted to thought, that what makes a good book is not that it should gain its reader's acquiescence, but that it should multiply his mental experience; that it should acquaint him with the ideas which philosophers and scholars, reared by a training different from their own, have laboriously reached and devoutly entertain; that, in a word, it should enlarge his materials and his sympathies as a man and a thinker."—*Prospective Review*.

"A series of serious and manly publications."—*Economist*.



## The Catholic Series.

### Representative Men.

SEVEN LECTURES. By RALPH WALDO EMERSON. Post 8vo. cloth. 5s.

"Mr. Emerson's book is for us rather strange than pleasing. Like Mr. Carlyle, he strains after effect by quaint phraseology—the novelty will gain him admirers and readers. At the same time there is good sterling stuff in him;—already possessing a great name in his own country, and being well known to the reading world of Europe, his present work, speaking of men and things with which we are familiar, will extend his fame. It is more real and material than his former volumes; more pointedly written, more terse and pithy, contains many new views, and is on the whole both a good and a readable book."—*Economist*.

"There are many sentences that glitter and sparkle like crystals in the sun-

light; and many thoughts, which seem invoked by a stern philosophy from the depths of the heart."—*Weekly News*.

"There is more practical sense and wisdom to be found in it (this Book) than in any of the Books he has given to the world, since his first..... When Emerson keeps within his depth, he scatters about him a great deal of true wisdom, mingled with much genuine poetry. There is also a merit in him which it would be ungrateful not to acknowledge; he has made others think; he has directed the minds of thousands to loftier exercises than they had known before; he has stimulated the reflective faculties of multitudes, and thus led to inquiry, and inquiry certainly will conduct to truth."—*Critic*.

### William Von Humboldt's Letters to a Female Friend.

A Complete Edition, Translated from the Second German Edition. By CATHERINE M. A. COUPER, Author of "Visits to Beechwood Farm." "Lucy's Half-Crown," &c. In 2 vols. small 8vo. cloth, 10s. 6d.

"We cordially recommend these volumes to the attention of our readers..... The work is in every way worthy of the character and experience of its distinguished author."—*Daily News*.

"These admirable letters were, we believe, first introduced to notice in England by the 'Athenæum;' and perhaps no greater boon was ever conferred upon the English reader than in the publication of the two volumes which contain this excellent translation of William Humboldt's portion of a lengthened correspondence with his female friend."—*Westminster and Foreign Quarterly Review*.

"The beautiful series of W. Von Humboldt's letters, now for the first time translated and published complete, possess not only high intrinsic

interest, but an interest arising from the very striking circumstances in which they originated..... We wish we had space to verify our remarks. But we should not know where to begin, or where to end; we have therefore no alternative but to recommend the entire book to careful perusal, and to promise a continuance of occasional extracts into our columns from the beauties of thought and feeling with which it abounds."—*Manchester Examiner and Times*.

"It is the only complete collection of these remarkable letters, which has yet been published in English, and the translation is singularly perfect; we have seldom read such a rendering of German thoughts into the English tongue."—*Critic*.

### Popular Christianity: its Transition State and probable Deve-

lopment. By FREDERICK FOXTON, A.B., formerly of Pembroke College, Oxford, and perpetual Curate of Stoke Prior and Docklow, Herefordshire. Post 8vo, cloth, 6s.

"Few writers are bolder, but his manner is singularly considerate toward the very opinions that he combats—his language singularly calm and measured. He is evidently a man who has his purpose sincerely at heart, and indulges in no writing for effect. But

what most distinguishes him from many with whom he may be compared is, the positiveness of his doctrine. A prototype for his volume may be found in that of the American, Theodore Parker—the 'Discourse of Religion.' There is a great coincidence



## THE CATHOLIC SERIES—(continued.)

in the train of ideas. Parker is more copious and eloquent, but Foxton is far more explicit, definite, and comprehensible in his meaning."—*Spectator*.

"He has a penetration into the spiritual desires and wants of the age possible only to one who partakes of them, and he has uttered the most prophetic fact of our religious condition, with a force of conviction which itself gives confidence, that the fact is as he sees it. His book appears to us to contain many just and profound views of the religious character of the present age, and its indications of progress. He often touches a deep and fruitful truth with a power and fulness that leave

nothing to be desired."—*Prospective Review*, Nov. 1849.

"It contains many passages that show a warm appreciation of the moral beauty of Christianity,—written with considerable power."—*Inquirer*.

".....with earnestness and eloquence."—*Critic*.

"We must refer our readers to the work itself, which is most ably written, and evinces a spirit at once earnest, enlightened, and liberal; in a small compass he presents a most lucid exposition of views, many of them original, and supported by arguments which cannot fail to create a deep sensation in the religious world."—*Observer*.

### Memoir of Johann Gottlieb Fichte.

By WILLIAM SMITH. Second edition, enlarged. Post 8vo, cloth, 4s. 6d.

".....A Life of Fichte, full of nobleness and instruction, of grand purpose, tender feeling, and brave effort! .....the compilation of which is executed with great judgment and fidelity."—*Prospective Review*.

"We state Fichte's character as it is known and admitted by men of all parties among the Germans, when we say that so robust an intellect, a soul so calm, so lofty, massive, and immove-

able, has not mingled in philosophical discussion since the time of Luther. ....Fichte's opinions may be true or false; but his character as a thinker can be slightly valued only by such as know it ill; and as a man, approved by action and suffering, in his life and in his death, he ranks with a class of men who were common only in better ages than ours."—*State of German Literature*, by Thomas Carlyle.

### The Vocation of the Scholar.

By JOHANN GOTTLIEB FICHTE. Translated from the German, by William Smith. Post 8vo. cloth, 2s.; paper cover, 1s. 6d.

"'The Vocation of the Scholar'....is distinguished by the same high moral tone, and manly, vigorous expression which characterize all Fichte's works in the German, and is nothing lost in Mr. Smith's clear, unembarrassed, and thoroughly English translation."—*Douglas Jerrold's Newspaper*.

"We are glad to see this excellent translation of one of the best of

Fichte's works presented to the public in a very neat form.....No class needs an earnest and sincere spirit more than the literary class: and therefore the 'Vocation of the Scholar,' the 'Guide of the Human Race,' written in Fichte's most earnest, most commanding temper, will be welcomed in its English dress by public writers, and be beneficial to the cause of truth."—*Economist*.

### On the Nature of the Scholar, and its Manifestations.

By JOHANN GOTTLIEB FICHTE. Translated from the German by William Smith. Second Edition. Post 8vo. cloth, 3s. 6d.

"With great satisfaction we welcome this first English translation of an author who occupies the most exalted position as a profound and original thinker; as an irresistible orator in the cause of what he believed to be truth; as a thoroughly honest and heroic man. .... The appearance of any of his works in our language is, we believe, a perfect novelty.....These orations are admirably fitted for their purpose; so grand is the position taken by the lecturer, and so irresistible their eloquence."—*Examiner*.

"This work must inevitably arrest the attention of the scientific physician, by the grand spirituality of its doctrines, and the pure morality it teaches..... Shall we be presumptuous if we recommend these views to our professional brethren? or if we say to the enlightened, the thoughtful, the serious, This—if you be true Scholars—is *your* Vocation? We know not a higher morality than this, or more noble principles than these: they are full of truth."—*British and Foreign Medico-Chirurgical Review*.

THE CATHOLIC SERIES—continued.

**The Vocation of Man.**

By JOHANN GOTTLIEB FICHTE. Translated from the German, by WILLIAM SMITH. Post 8vo, cloth, 4s. 6d.

"In the progress of my present work, I have taken a deeper glance into religion than ever I did before. In me the emotions of the heart proceed only from perfect intellectual clearness ;—it cannot be but that the clearness I have now attained on this subject shall also take possession of my heart."—*Fichte's Correspondence.*

"THE VOCATION OF MAN' is, as Fichte truly says, intelligible to all readers who are really able to understand a book at all ; and as the history of the mind in its various phases of doubt, knowledge, and faith, it is of interest to all. A book of this stamp is

sure to teach you much, because it excites thought. If it rouses you to combat his conclusions, it has done a good work ; for in that very effort you are stirred to a consideration of points which have hitherto escaped your indolent acquiescence."—*Foreign Quarterly.*

"This is Fichte's most popular work, and is every way remarkable."—*Atlas.*

"It appears to us the boldest and most emphatic attempt that has yet been made to explain to man his restless and unconquerable desire to win the True and the Eternal."—*Sentinel.*

**The Characteristics of the Present Age.**

By JOHANN GOTTLIEB FICHTE. Translated from the German, by William Smith. Post 8vo. cloth, 7s.

"A noble and most notable acquisition to the literature of England."—*Douglas Jerrold's Weekly Paper.*

"We accept these lectures as a true and most admirable delineation of the present age ; and on this ground alone we should bestow on them our heartiest recommendation ; but it is because they teach us how we may rise above the age that we bestow on them our most emphatic praise.

"He makes us think, and perhaps more sublimely than we have ever formerly thought, but it is only in order that we may the more nobly act.

"As a majestic and most stirring utterance from the lips of the greatest German prophet, we trust that the book will find a response in many an English soul, and potently help to regenerate English Society."—*The Critic.*

**The Popular Works of Johann Gottlieb Fichte.**

Post 8vo, cloth, 12s. per volume.

Contents of Vol. I.:—1. MEMOIR OF THE AUTHOR, by WILLIAM SMITH.  
2. THE VOCATION OF THE SCHOLAR. 3. THE NATURE OF THE SCHOLAR.  
4. THE VOCATION OF MAN.

Contents of Vol. II.:—1. THE CHARACTERISTICS OF THE PRESENT AGE.  
2. THE WAY TOWARDS THE BLESSED LIFE ; OR, THE DOCTRINE OF RELIGION.

**The Way towards the Blessed Life ; or, The Doctrine of Religion.**

Translated by WILLIAM SMITH. Post 8vo, cloth. 6s.

**Characteristics of Men of Genius ;**

A Series of Biographical, Historical, and Critical Essays, selected by permission, chiefly from the North American Review, with Preface, by JOHN CHAPMAN. 2 vols. post 8vo. cloth, 8s.

CONTENTS.

GREGORY VII., LOYOLA, PASCAL.

DANTE, PETRARCH, SHELLEY, BYRON, GOETHE, WORDSWORTH,  
MILTON, SCOTT, THE GERMAN POETS.

MICHAEL ANGELO, CANOVA.

MACHIAVELLI, LOUIS IX., PETER THE GREAT.

"Essays of very high order, which from their novelty, and their intrinsic value, we are sure will receive from the

British public a reception commensurate with their merits..... They are Essays which would do honour to the

## THE CATHOLIC SERIES—(continued.)

literature of any country."—*Westminster Review*.

"Essays of great power and interest. .... In freedom of opinion, and occasionally in catholicity of judgment, the writers are superior to our own periodical essayists; but we think there is less brilliancy and point in them; though on that very account there is, perhaps, greater impartiality and justice."—*Douglas Jerrold's Magazine*.

"Rich as we are in this delightful department of Literature, we gladly accept another contribution to critical biography. .... The American writers keep more closely to their text than our own reviewers, and are less solicitous to construct a theory of their own, and

thereby run the risk of discolouring the facts of history, than to take a calm and dispassionate survey of events and opinions."—*Morning Chronicle*.

"Essays well worthy of an European Life."—*Christian Reformer*.

"The collection before us is able and readable, with a good deal of interest in its subjects. They exhibit force, justness of remark, an acquaintance with their subject, beyond the mere book reviewed; much clear-headed painstaking in the paper itself, where the treatment requires pains, a larger and more liberal spirit than is often found in Transatlantic literature, and sometimes a marked and forcible style."—*Spectator*.

## The Worship of Genius ;

Being an Examination of the Doctrine announced by *D. F. Strauss*, viz. "That to our Age of Religious Disorganization nothing is left but a Worship of Genius; that is, a Reverence for those great Spirits who create Epochs in the Progress of the Human Race, and in whom, taken collectively, the God-like manifests itself to us most fully," and thus having reference to the views unfolded in the work entitled, "*Heroes and Hero-worship*," by *Thomas Carlyle*.

AND

## The Distinctive Character or Essence of Christianity :

An Essay relative to Modern Speculations and the present State of Opinion. Translated, from the German of Prof. C. Ullmann, by *LUCY SANFORD*. 1 vol. post 8vo. 2s.

"There are many just and beautiful conceptions expressed and developed, and the mode of utterance and illustration is more clear and simple than that adopted often by our German brethren in treating such topics."—*Nonconformist*.

"There is in it much important and original thought. Intelligent British Christians, who are inclined to take philosophical views of the Christian faith, will find much to delight and instruct them."—*Baptist Magazine*.

## The Life of Jean Paul Fr. Richter.

Compiled from various sources. Together with his Autobiography, translated from the German. Second Edition. Illustrated with a Portrait engraved on steel. Post 8vo, cloth, 7s. 6d.

"The autobiography of Richter, which extends only to his twelfth year, is one of the most interesting studies of a true poet's childhood ever given to the world."—*Lowe's Edinburgh Magazine*.

"Richter has an intellect vehement, rugged, irresistible, crushing in pieces the hardest problems; piercing into the most hidden combinations of things, and grasping the most distant; an imagination vague, sombre, splendid, or appalling, brooding over the abysses of being, wandering through infinitude, and summoning before us, in its dim religious light, shapes of brilliancy, solemnity, or terror; a fancy of exuberance literally unexampled, for it pours its treasures with a lavishness which knows no limit, hanging, like the sun, a jewel on every grass-blade, and sowing the earth at large with orient pearls. But deeper than all

these lies humour, the ruling quality of RICHTER—as it were the central fire that pervades and vivifies his whole being. He is a humorist from his inmost soul; he thinks as a humorist; he imagines, acts, feels as a humorist: sport is the element in which his nature lives and works."—*THOMAS CARLYLE*.

"With such a writer it is no common treat to be intimately acquainted. In the proximity of great and virtuous minds we imbibe a portion of their nature—feel, as mesmerists say, a healthful contagion, are braced with the same spirit of faith, hope, and patient endurance—are furnished with data for clearing up and working out the intricate problem of life, and are inspired, like them, with the prospect of immortality. No reader of sensibility can rise from the perusal of these volumes with-



## THE CATHOLIC SERIES—(continued.)

out becoming both wiser and better.”—*Atlas*.

“Apart from the interest of the work, as the life of Jean Paul, the reader learns something of German life and German thought, and is introduced to Weimar during its most distinguished period—when Goethe, Schiller, Herder, and Wieland, the great fixed stars of Germany, in conjunction with Jean Paul, were there, surrounded by beautiful and admiring women, of the most refined and exalted natures, and of princely rank. It is full of passages so attractive and valuable that it is difficult to make a selection as examples of its character.”—*Inquirer*.

“The work is a useful exhibition of a great and amiable man, who, possessed of the kindest feelings, and the most brilliant fantasy, turned to a high purpose that humour of which Rabelais is the great grandfather, and Sterne one of the line of ancestors, and contrasted it with an exaltation of feeling and a rhapsodical poetry which are entirely his own. Let us hope that it will complete the work begun by Mr. Carlyle’s Essays, and cause Jean Paul to be really read in this country.”—*Examiner*.

“Richter is exhibited in a most amiable light in this biography—industri-

ous, frugal, benevolent, with a child-like simplicity of character, and a heart overflowing with the purest love. His letters to his wife are beautiful memorials of true affection, and the way in which he perpetually speaks of his children shows that he was the most attached and indulgent of fathers. Whoever came within the sphere of his companionship appears to have contracted an affection for him that death only dissolved: and while his name was resounding through Germany, he remained as meek and humble as if he had still been an unknown adventurer on Parnassus.”—*The Apprentice*.

“The life of Jean Paul is a charming piece of biography which draws and rivets the attention. The affections of the reader are fixed on the hero with an intensity rarely bestowed on an historical character. It is impossible to read this biography without a conviction of its integrity and truth; and though Ritcher’s style is more difficult of translation than that of any other German, yet we feel that his golden thoughts have reached us pure from the mine, to which he has given that impress of genius which makes them current in all countries.”—*Christian Reformer*.

## The Mental History of an Inquiring Spirit.

A Biography of Charles Elwood. By O. A. BROWNSON. Post 8vo. 2s. 6d. cloth; 2s. paper cover.

“This work is an attempt to present Christianity so that it shall satisfy the philosophic element of our nature. In this consists its peculiar merit and its distinctive characteristic. Such a book was certainly very much needed. We have no doubt that it will add many a doubter to a cheerful faith, and confirm many a feeble mind in the faith it has already professed. Mr. Brownson addresses the philosophic element, and the men in whom this element is predominant; and, of course, he presents the arguments that would be the most striking and satisfactory to this class of men. In so far as he has succeeded, he must be considered to have done a meritorious work. We think Mr. Brownson eminently qualified for this task, and that his success is complete. The work will, doubtless, be the means of giving composure and serenity to the faith of many who are as yet weak in the faith, or halting between two opinions.”—*Christian Examiner*.

“The purposes, in this stage of his progress, which Mr. Brownson has in view are, the vindication of the reality of the religious principle in the nature of

man; the existence of an order of sentiments higher than the calculations of the understanding and the deductions of logic; the foundation of morals on the absolute idea of right in opposition to the popular doctrine of expediency; the exposition of a spiritual philosophy; and the connexion of Christianity with the progress of society.

“The work presents the most profound ideas in a simple and attractive form. The discussion of these principles, which in their primitive abstraction are so repulsive to most minds, is carried on, through the medium of a slight fiction, with considerable dramatic effect. We become interested in the final opinions of the subjects of the tale, as we do in the catastrophe of a romance. A slender thread of narrative is made to sustain the most weighty arguments on the philosophy of religion; but the conduct both of the story and of the discussion is managed with so much skill, that they serve to relieve and forward each other.”—*Dial*.

“We can cordially recommend the volume, after a very careful perusal.”—*Sentinel*.



## THE CATHOLIC SERIES—(continued.)

**The Mission of the German Catholics.**

By Prof. G. G. GERVINUS, Author of the "Geschichte der Poetischen National-Literatur der Deutschen." Post 8vo. 6d.

**The Philosophical and Æsthetic Letters and Essays of Schiller.**

Translated, with an Introduction, by J. WEISS. Post 8vo. 5s. cloth.

"These Letters stand unequalled in the department of Æsthetics, and are so esteemed even in Germany, which is so fruitful upon that topic. Schiller is Germany's best Æsthetician, and these letters contain the highest moments of Schiller. Whether we desire rigorous logical investigation or noble poetic expression, whether we wish to stimulate the intellect or inflame the heart, we need seek no further than these. They are trophies won from an unpopular, metaphysical form, by a lofty, inspiring, and absorbing subject."—*Introduction.*

"It is not possible, in a brief notice like the present, to do more than intimate the kind of excellence of a book of this nature. It is a profound and beautiful dissertation, and must be diligently studied to be comprehended. After all the innumerable efforts that the present age has been some time making to cut a Royal road to everything, it is beginning to find that what sometimes seems the longest way round is the shortest way home; and if there be a desire to have truth, the only way is to work at the windlass one's self, and bring up the buckets by the labour of one's own good arm. Whoever works at the present well, will find ample reward for the labour they may bestow on it; the truths he will draw up are universal, and from that pure elementary fountain 'that maketh wise he that drinketh thereat.'"—*Douglas Jerrold's Magazine.*

"It is difficult, if not impossible, to give a brief, and at the same time faithful, summary of the ideas affirmed by Schiller in this volume. Its aim is to develop the ideal of humanity, and to define the successive steps which must be trodden to attain it. Its spirit aspires after human improvement, and seeks to indicate the means of realization. Schiller insists upon the necessity of æsthetic culture as preliminary to moral culture, and in order to make the latter possible. According to the doctrine here set forth, until man is æsthetically developed, he cannot be

morally free, hence not responsible, as there is no sphere for the operation of the will.

"The style in which the whole volume is written is particularly beautiful, there is a consciousness of music in every page we read; it is remarkable for the condensation of thought and firm consistency which prevails throughout; and, so far as we are able to judge, the translation is admirably and faithfully rendered. The twenty-seven letters upon the 'Æsthetic Culture of Man,' form the most prominent, and by far the most valuable, portion of the work; they will be found full of interest and the choicest riches, which will abundantly repay any amount of labour bestowed upon them."—*Inquirer.*

"This is a book which demands and deserves study. Either to translate or to appreciate it requires a somewhat peculiar turn of mind. Not that any body could read it without profit, but to gain from it all that it is capable of yielding, there must be some aptitude for such studies, and some training in them too. . . . To be appreciated it must be studied, and the study will be well repaid."—*Christian Examiner.*

"Here we must close, unwillingly, this volume, so abounding in food for thought, so fruitful of fine passages, heartily commending it to all of our readers who desire to make acquaintance with the philosophy of art. The extracts we have taken will prove what a treasure is here, for they are but a fraction of the gems that are to be gathered in every page. We make no apology for having so long lingered over this book; for, albeit, philosophy is somewhat out of fashion in our age of materialism, it yet will find its votaries, fit though few; and even they who care not for the higher regions of reflection, cannot fail to reap infinite pleasure from the eloquent and truthful passages we have sought to cull for their mingled delight and edification." *Critic.*

**The Rationale of Religious Inquiry;**

Or, the Question stated, of Reason, the Bible, and the Church. By JAMES MARTINEAU. Third Edition, With a Critical Letter on Rationalism, Miracles, and the Authority of Scripture, by the late Rev. JOSEPH BLANCO WHITE. 4s. paper cover; 4s. 6d. cloth.

## THE CATHOLIC SERIES—(continued.)

**The Philosophy of Art.**

An Oration on the Relation of the Plastic Arts to Nature. Translated from the German of F. W. J. VON SCHELLING, by A. JOHNSON. Post 8vo. 1s. paper cover; 1s. 6d. cloth.

"This excellent oration is an application to art of Schelling's general philosophic principles. Schelling takes the bold course, and declares that what is ordinarily called nature is not the summit of perfection, but is only the inadequate manifestation of a high idea, which it is the office of man to penetrate. The true astronomer is not he who notes down laws and causes which were never revealed to sensuous organs, and which are often opposed to the *prima facie* influences of sensuous observers. The true artist is not he who merely imitates an isolated object in nature, but he who can penetrate into the unseen essence that lurks behind the visible crust, and afterwards reproduce it in a visible form. In the surrounding world means and ends are

clashed and jarred together; in the work of art the heterogeneous is excluded, and a unity is attained not to be found elsewhere. Schelling, in his oration, chiefly, not exclusively, regards the arts of painting and sculpture; but his remarks will equally apply to others, such as poetry and music. This oration of Schelling's deserves an extensive perusal. The translation, with the exception of a few trifling inaccuracies, is admirably done by Mr. Johnson; and we know of no work in our language better suited to give a notion of the turn which German philosophy took after it abandoned the subjectivity of Kant and Fichte. The notion will, of course, be a faint one; but it is something to know the latitude and longitude of a mental position."—*Examiner*.

**Essays. By R. W. Emerson.**

(Second Series.) With a Notice by THOMAS CARLYLE. 3s. paper cover; 3s. 6d. cloth.

"The difficulty we find in giving a proper notice of this volume, arises from the pervadingness of its excellence, and the compression of its matter. With more learning than Hazlitt, more perspicuity than Carlyle, more vigour and depth of thought than Addison, and with as much originality and fascination as any of them, this volume is a brilliant addition to the Table Talk of intellectual men, be they who or where they may."—*Prospective Review*.

"Mr. Emerson is not a common man, and everything he writes contains suggestive matter of much thought and earnestness."—*Examiner*.

"That Emerson is, in a high degree, possessed of the faculty and vision of the *seer*, none can doubt who will earnestly and with a kind and reverential spirit peruse these nine Essays. He deals only with the true and the eternal. His piercing gaze at once shoots swiftly, surely through the outward and the superficial, to the inmost causes and workings. Any one can tell the time who looks on the face of the clock, but he loves to lay bare the machinery and show its moving principle. His words and his thoughts are a fresh spring, that invigorates the soul that is steeped therein. His mind is ever dealing with the eternal; and those who only live to exercise their lower intellectual faculties, and desire only new facts and new

images, and those who have not a feeling or an interest in the great question of mind and matter, eternity and nature, will disregard him as unintelligible and uninteresting, as they do Bacon and Plato, and, indeed, philosophy itself."—*Douglas Jerrold's Magazine*.

"Beyond social science, because beyond and outside social existence, there lies the science of self, the development of man in his individual existence, within himself and for himself. Of this latter science, which may perhaps be called the philosophy of individuality, Mr. Emerson is an able apostle and interpreter."—*League*.

"As regards the particular volume of EMERSON before us, we think it an improvement upon the first series of essays. The subjects are better chosen. They come home more to the experience of the mass of mankind, and are consequently more interesting. Their treatment also indicates an artistic improvement in the composition."—*Spectator*.

"All lovers of literature will read Mr. Emerson's new volume, as the most of them have read his former one; and if correct taste, and sober views of life, and such ideas on the higher subjects of thought as we have been accustomed to account as truths, are sometimes outraged, we at least meet at every step with originality, imagination, and eloquence."—*Inquirer*.

## THE CATHOLIC SERIES—(continued.)

**The Roman Church and Modern Society.**

By E. QUINET, of the College of France. Translated from the French Third Edition (with the Author's approbation), by C. COCKS, B.L. 8vo. 2s. 6d. cloth

"This enlightened volume....."—*Christian Reformer.*

"Considered as a whole, the book before us is the most powerful and philosophically consistent protest against the Roman Church which has ever claimed our attention, and, as a strong confirmation of its stirring efficiency, we may mention that the excitement it has created in Paris has subjected the author to a reprimand from both Chambers of the Legislature, and excommunication by the Pope."—*Inquirer.*

"M. Quinet belongs to the movement

party, and has lately been conspicuous in resisting the pretensions of the Jesuit and French clergy to the exclusive education of the youth of France. He has grappled with his theme both practically, and in the philosophical spirit of history..... Rare merits are comprised in this volume..... a genuine spirit pervades it, and there are many passages of great depth, originality and eloquence."—*Atlas.*

"..... These eloquent and valuable lectures."—*New Church Advocate.*

**Sermons of Consolation.**

By F. W. P. GREENWOOD, D.D. 3s. cloth.

"This a really delightful volume, which we would gladly see producing its purifying and elevating influences in all our families."—*Inquirer.*

"This beautiful volume we are sure

will meet with a grateful reception from all who seek instruction on the topics most interesting to a thoughtful mind. There are twenty-seven sermons in the volume."—*Christian Examiner.*

**Self-Culture.**

By WILLIAM ELLERY CHANNING. 6d. paper cover; 1s. cloth.

**Christianity, or Europe.**

Translated from the German of NOVALIS (Friedrich von Hardenberg), by the Rev. J. DALTON. 6d. paper cover.

**The Critical and Miscellaneous Writings of Theodore Parker.**

Post 8vo. cloth, 6s.

"It will be seen from these extracts that Theodore Parker is a writer of considerable power and freshness, if not originality. Of the school of Carlyle, or rather taking the same German originals for his models, Parker has a more sober style and a less theatric taste. His composition wants the grotesque animation and richness of Carlyle, but it is vivid, strong, and frequently picturesque, with a tenderness that the great Scotchman does not possess."—*Spectator.*

"Viewing him as a most useful, as well as highly gifted man, we cordially welcome the appearance of an English reprint of some of his best productions. The 'Miscellaneous' Pieces are characterised by the peculiar eloquence, which is without a parallel in the works of

English writers. His language is almost entirely figurative: the glories of nature are pressed into his service, and convey his most careless thought. This is the principal charm of his writings; his eloquence is altogether unlike that of the English orator or essayist; it partakes of the grandeur of the forests in his native land; and we seem, when listening to his speech, to hear the music of the woods, the rustling of the pine-trees, and the ringing of the woodman's axe. In this respect he resembles Emerson; but, unlike that celebrated man, he never discourses audibly with himself, in a language unknown to the world—he is never obscure; the stream, though deep, reveals the glittering gems which cluster so thickly on its bed."—*Inquirer.*











